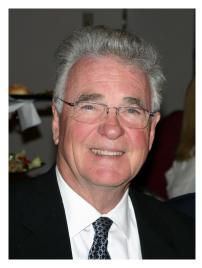


Politics of

Dwight Albert Sharpe

An Autobiography by Dwight Albert (D. A.) Sharpe



[Who was D.A. Sharpe?]

Sharpe's Personal Website: <u>www.dasharpe.com</u>

Recent Update: June 25, 2018

Foreword

A forward is to be written by someone other than myself, to give credibility to the autobiography and to me as its author. It also in intended to provide interest for people who will want to read the autobiography.



Such foreword writer would need to have access to the completed manuscript before venturing his or her commendation. Therefore, no foreword is displayed in these development stages of the autobiography.

We do have assurance from the <u>Rev. Dr. S.</u> <u>Eugene Bailey</u>, Senior Executive Pastor of the Eagle Mountain International Church, Fort Worth, Texas to provide a foreword upon completion of the manuscript. That is a great honor, and we look forward to that gift with positive anticipation.



D. A. Sharpe, Autobiographer

Preface



This autobiography is written, primarily, for the benefit of my children, grandchildren and other descendants who follow. Hopefully, it will benefit historical or genealogical researchers who enjoy finding works that connect various aspects of history and family together. A Bible passage where God expresses some reasons to delve into family history and to learn about our ancestry can be found:

Psalm 78: 2-7 (NLT)

1 O my people, listen to my instructions.				
Open your ears to what I am saying,				
² for I will speak to you in a parable.				
I will teach you hidden lessons from our past—				
³ stories we have heard and known,				
stories our ancestors handed down to us.				
⁴ We will not hide these truths from our children;				
we will tell the next generation				
about the glorious deeds of the Lord,				
about his power and his mighty wonders.				
⁵ For he issued his laws to Jacob;				
he gave his instructions to Israel.				
He commanded our ancestors				
to teach them to their children,				
⁶ so the next generation might know them—				
even the children not yet born—				
and they in turn will teach their own children.				
⁷ So each generation should set its hope anew on God,				
not forgetting his glorious miracles				
and obeying his commands.				

First, the foremost important, lasting and significant human influence in my life has been the marriage to my lovely bride, <u>Suzanne Margaret Boggess Sharpe</u>, my partner in life since our meeting and marriage in 1962! She, in many respects, has shaped & enabled me to be the man that I am, for which I sing her eternal praises! Not only have we been marriage partners and genuine personal friends, but also, we have grown together spiritually over the years in ways that have brought the utmost of wholesomeness in our lives, as we have understood God's Providence in how He intended us to pursue life.

Here she is as a very young girl. You can tell already that she would be beautiful!

Suzanne has been the most wonderful wife and mother that I ever could have imagined in the best of God's Providence. This is a 1962 photo, the year of our marriage. Isn't she beautiful? And still is!





Before embarking on this autobiographical journey, I realized that I possess hardly any written material by my parents, close relatives, or my ancestors in general. This revelation influenced me to pursue production of this work. Most of what I know of our family are the recollections of conversations and experiences witnessed in my family. Fortunately, some photographs from the past survive and are used in this autobiography. As time advances, some of the recollections fade in memory.

It seemed there is a place for the written expression of what has been my privilege to discover in genealogical researching since 1978 and the experiences it has been my honor to live. This research has resulted in the database collection of over 9,000 relatives, mostly ancestors who are long-since deceased. However, there is an accumulation of some 400 relatives seemingly still alive, distant though some might be in relationship. In writing, my desire is that other people who have crossed paths with my life and have made my life such a pleasing and blessed experience will identify with many of those factors. Certainly, I would sense great satisfaction, if this writing motivated our grandchildren to seek avenues of living outside merely themselves - - into spiritual lives, into community and public governance involvements, and into knowing from where their heritages have sprung.

This autobiography intends not to highlight me as the star, but rather to highlight those people who have intersected with the paths of my life or my family - - people who are important, publicly-known, and accomplished as achievers. In general, I have received blessing, privilege, and benefit from such associations.

So, another motivation is to make known information about the vast range of historically publicly known personalities who have relationships in our family line, both direct lineage and laterally related. They include English and other royalty as well as American elected officials, including 17 of the 45 Presidents of the United States and seven of the Vice Presidents that we have had. Highlights of their Christian faith is included where such has been discovered in my research.

Creation of this autobiography serves another reason: Educational purposes. I sincerely hope it will be an example of a modern approach to publishing a book. Being published on a website allows the embedding of hyperlinks to other sources of information. For example, to mention the name of an institution, a hyperlink can be imbedded to that institution's website or to a Wikipedia or other posting about it for more detailed information or history. Most of the hyperlinks chosen have been to use the Wikipedia source, thinking it more often presents a less biased report on that object, as opposed the institution's own promotional website.

Another example is telling about my Sharpe surname's descending from the 1600s. The autobiography gives an eight-page summary of our family line, but a hyperlink goes to an online posted detailed family genealogy report of a dozen generations, with all the details known to me about that family line, totaling some 125 pages or more! The reader can choose to look at, save, or even print the long report or not.



Also, when mention is made about a distant relationship to a famous person, like <u>Winston</u> <u>Churchill</u>, being my 8th cousin, four times removed from the husband of the 4th great granddaughter of my 7th great grandfather, a hyperlink clicking on the person's name can take one to a chart that shows those connections. Here's my compilation about Sir Winston and his relation to our family.

This autobiography is to be freely available to read onscreen or by downloading from the personal website in a Microsoft Word format:

www.dasharpe.com

If the information is downloaded and redistributed, acknowledgement of its origin from this composition would be appreciated. Also, hearing how you've chosen to use parts of it would be interesting for me to hear from you.

An overriding motivation in my heart to compile this autobiography is to find multiple occasions in its writings and stories to witness to the fact of Christian commitment in my beliefs and ancestry, and to illustrate a path of my life from which our contemporary culture seems to have departed.

This is cultural status is well stated by Brad Cummins, a general editor in his "The Origin of the Dream of Freedom," which is a prefacing letter from the publishers of the Founders' Bible (NAS), Shiloh Road Publishers, LLC, Newbury Park, CA, 91320, First Edition, August 2012:

"We have become a nation that has a tale of two histories. One that has a deep, rich spiritual heritage that speaks of a Godly purpose and destiny that was born in the heart of this nation as it was founded, and another that is progressively seeking to distance itself from that, trying to pretend it does not exist. Given a generation of dominance in public education where God seems to have been edited out of the equation, and we have become a nation with spiritual amnesia. We do not know, because we have not heard."





Here is a source of reasonably full disclosure about Dwight Albert (D. A.) Sharpe, who has several different hats to wear.

First and foremost, D. A. Sharpe stands firmly in line with his life-time commitment as a Christian, a believer in Jesus Christ as Son of God. His <u>Christian testimony</u> can be found in the "<u>Who was D. A. Sharpe</u>?" link.

He is a fifth-generation Texan, with family roots as citizens of the Republic of Texas; he is a sixth-generation United States citizen, descended from an American Revolutionary soldier; he is an eighth-generation German immigrant from 1710; and a tenth-generation American, descended from

Mayflower leadership who arrived in 1620. His earliest direct ancestor is a Viking born around 400 AD, who is Sharpe's 38th great grandfather. There is another 38th grandfather born in the 700s.

His earliest ancestor recorded as <u>professing faith in Jesus Christ</u> as the Son of God was a pagan Scottish monarch led to that profession by a Roman Catholic evangelist baptizing the King in 591. The evangelist had been sent to England by <u>Pope Gregory the Great</u>. See Chapter 1.

Provided here are biographical sketches from six different perspectives: (1) A personal life biographical sketch; (2) a professional occupational experiences; (3) a Christian testimony; (4) a genealogical & historical sketch; (5) a political sketch and (6) a church experiences & organizations sketch. These are provided in the link at the end of the Introduction to the Autobiography section. They also are in the "Who was D. A. Sharpe?" link on the title page.

There are <u>24 organizations</u> of which he is a member in Chapter 53.

There are <u>10 Churches</u> of which he's been a member in Chapter 54.

The <u>21 Publications</u> to which he subscribes are identified in Chapter 72.

The <u>17 United States Presidents</u> and seven U.S. Vice Presidents related to his family are displayed in Chapter 51.

There are <u>27 famous Americans</u>' biographical sketches who are related to the Sharpe family that are cited in the autobiography. They are in the "<u>Who was D. A. Sharpe?</u>" link on the title page.

There are <u>several (21) leaders internationally</u> who are related to our family who have roles in governance or military service.

There are <u>19 stores of life's experiences</u> that have been written and distributed to a subscription list, and there are copies of over two dozen articles written by or in which he is mentioned that have appeared over the years in four different newspapers. These are in <u>Chapter 50</u>.

There is a chart indicating the <u>63 British monarchs</u> out of the 79 who have ruled approximately over the past 1,500 years who are related to the Sharpe family, plus a couple other international leaders. These are in <u>Chapter 52</u>.

There are some <u>internationally known Christian people</u> related to the Sharpe family, such and Isaac Watts and as Smith Wigglesworth. They are in the "<u>Who was D. A. Sharpe</u>?" link on the title page. Also, these are found in Chapters <u>47</u> and <u>55</u>.

There's an explanation of the <u>Texas Navy</u> in which both D. A. and Suzanne Sharpe are Admirals, having been commissioned by Texas Governors Rick Perry and Craig Abbott.

Miscellaneous other sources are available on his website for your review

D. A. Sharpe 805 Derting Road East Aurora, (Wise County) TX 76078-3712 <u>da@dasharpe.com</u> Cell: 817-504-6508 <u>Biographical Sketch Information</u>

Introduction to the Autobiography



The arrangement of this autobiography will begin with several chapters covering various segments of my life. These chapters will tell about where my family lived and generally the activities that we experienced. They will describe individuals as they mixed into the Sharpe family life and things that evolved with them as they grew and matured.

You may notice that the online text displays numerous hyperlinks, which can take the reader to more detailed online explanations. For example, the autobiography text may describe one family line from the 1600s in eight pages. A link in that text could take the reader to a far more detailed 150+ page genealogical report, such as this one for my <u>Sharpe family line</u>.

This autobiography is planned to be about 600 pages. However, the vast number of hyperlinks to other information of relevance to names of people or entities is something on the order of over 15,000 additional pages. This is a work on the scale of encyclopedic produce!

Next will arise some chapters citing special categories of my life experiences. Therein, my spiritual experiences and commitments will be described in two aspects. One will be the spiritual experiences I had, both inside churches and in other arenas. The other part will describe the various churches and church organizational structures in which my life was involved.

It must be stated that professional genealogists generally believe that accurate documentation of information prior to the 1600s is of doubtful accuracy, and

generally, matters not easily documented. Records were not given as serious attention in those cultures as we'd hoped in our modern days. However, it is my inclination to think that information about those ancient individuals who had some fame or some royalty may have a little more believable accuracy than nonroyal people. That leads me to give enough cautionary credence as enabling me to enjoy the stories!

<u>My political endeavors</u> and events in life will be specified. Those sections will cover the numerous political activities and roles served over the course of time in two different states and in three different counties covering more than 40 years. Further, it includes the several US Presidential Inaugurations we have attended.

I realize that professional genealogists generally question the validity of researched records about people earlier than the 1600s. Some lines of royalty or of rulers may have more legitimacy, as information about such people presented has more likelihood of data being recorded and preserved. However, in my narratives, I will relate information I have discovered written somewhere, and often its authenticity is unable to be proven. However, those bits of information are interesting to me, so such is shared with you.

Why do I do history & genealogy, and How did I do it?

You will learn how there are cousin relationships with <u>17 of our 45 U. S.</u> Presidents, including all four of them depicted on <u>Mount Rushmore</u>. You will discover how cousin relationships exist with <u>English monarchy</u> for all but about 100 years over the past 1,500+ years. In fact, I have explained a family connection between what I consider the world's two most importance documents of governance: The <u>Magna Carta and the Mayflower Compact</u>. Of course, I do place the Holy Scriptures on top of all written works which provide successful solutions for human beings corporately to live!

I have striven to learn as much as I can research about the Christian heritage and experiences of my ancestors. In 591, <u>King Ceawlin</u>, a pagan king in what became Scotland, received Christian Baptism. As such, he is the earliest member of our family's ancestry of whom we learned claimed Christianity.

Some writing will be about newspaper or magazine articles of mine that have been published. One of the newspaper articles published in our local <u>*Wise*</u> <u>*County Messenger*</u> in 2014 encouraged people to write brief <u>stories</u> of their life to preserve and to hand down to their children, grandchildren and friends.

Words are important, and should be kept in perspective!

That newspaper article led to the creation of a subscription list to which quarterly stories in my life would be circulated to subscribers for about three years as samples and illustrations of storytelling about lives so that they would be encouraged to write about themselves. All those dozen+ stories written so far will be included in this autobiography.

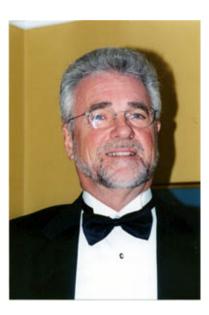
These stories include crossing paths with such people as <u>Corrie Ten Boom</u>, <u>Chuck Colson</u>, <u>Billy Graham</u>, and some US Congressional members. Looking back in history, they include <u>Sir Thomas Abney</u> (of my mother's lineage) who was Mayor of London circa 1700 and his connection with Great Britain's <u>Father</u> <u>of Hymnody</u>, truly an outstanding Christian musician.

The <u>autobiography</u> basically has the story that can be read onscreen in a HTML format, chapter by chaper. The Microsoft Word document with all the hyperlinks must be downloaded to make use of the hyperlinks. However, those links provide multitude of additional documentation and information to supplement to basic autobiography. Here is a link to a chart that shows how many Basic pages there are, how many photographs there are and how many additional pages are available through hyperlinks.

http://www.dasharpe.com/Autobiography/Page%20Counts.pdf

The arrangement of this work follows the guidelines of this article, <u>"How to Write</u> <u>a Book."</u> It might be useful for future writers of books, either hard copy of e-books.

I hope and trust that the readers of this work will find enjoyment, interest, and even some humor!



D. A. Sharpe 805 Derting Road East Aurora, (Wise County) TX 76078-3712 da@dasharpe.com Cell: 817-504-6508 Biographical Sketch Information

Acknowledgements

Having started the genealogical quest back in 1978 to learn of my ancestry, I have encountered many people and sources of information that I have used - - so multitudinous that my listing of those I appreciate inevitably omits some, much to my regret. However, here are some who have been very dear and valuable to me that I can list.

Some people have contributed matters of quantity information or quality revelations that have enabled me to assemble this autobiography. They are not all the most significant people in my life, but these are special people in my heart, in the form of help and encouragement, to accomplished this task.

Here is my recollection of several people whose help and guidance have enabled me to pursue the creation of this autobiography. Photographs are included where available.

Contributors to this worthy project, in alphabetical order. They are people to whom I am especially grateful



5. David Barton has been a worthy and noted historian from whose published works have come invaluable information that I have used and from which I have quoted. David is a personal friend, with whom my earliest connections were through political service we both served, though he has achieved a national-level reputation. His knowledge of history and his Christian convictions pursued in his writings is a continual source of inspiration. His major work is carried out with his being the founder and director of <u>WallBuilders</u>, a Christian, history gathering institution that has a library of about 100,000 or more original historical documents to validate Christian heritage in America.



Beggess, Thomas (T. 5.) Shelton, Jr. (1912-2010) was my father-in-law. Not only is he the only father-in-law I have had, he is the very best man that I ever could imagine as a father-inlaw. Though my father lived 19 years after our marriage, T. S. lived 48 years after our marriage. So, in many respects, he represented a father image for me. His help for me in assimilating vast amount of Boggess family heritage information was one of the most successful resources for me. He added, not only varied details, but it was colored with so many real life and fun stories. He was a fine gentleman in all the best senses!



Dr. Julian Eugene (Gene) Boggess III is the prime genealogist for the Boggess family that I know. His provision of information has been an immense contribution enabling the value of this autobiography, principally in the Boggess and related lines. He is forever helpful and interested.

Ehlers, Jr., Victor (Vic) Marcus (1923-1985) was my brother-inlaw who learned that my father had the possibility of being included in the estate of a wealthy distant relative. The information he learned in researching that possibility motivated me to learn about <u>Willis Sharpe Kilmer</u>. Further, it led me into interests about family and genealogy, and I was off-and-running, bitten by the bug that drives the pursuit of genealogy! Vic was born and raised in Austin, Travis County, Texas, and was a graduate of the University of Texas at Austin, my school as well.



Jann Alford Harper (born 1943) was a child in a family at Central Park Presbyterian Church



in Houston, TX in the 1940s. Her parents were friends of my parents, my father of whom was their Pastor at that church. For years, her parents had enjoyed the custom of collecting Christmas Card photographs, including those my father created and distributed. I was age 12 when our family moved from Houston in 1951. Within the past decade, Jann and I found each other on Facebook, and she gave me her possession of those Christmas Cards, many of which are images used in this autobiography. Naturally, I am exceedingly grateful to Jann for that special gift.

Jones, Ir., FASG, Henry (Hank) Z. (born 1940) is a retired RCA recording artist and film and TV actor, residing in San Diego, California. Though he authored numerous articles and books, the series that most impacted my research is his two volumes, "*The Palatine Families of New York, 1710 Volume I & II*" and his follow-up volume, "*More Palatine Families,*" then succeeded by the three-volume "Even More Palatine Families." As we had occasion to interface in 2017 about this autobiography, Hank helped by giving some previewing and evaluation that was heart-warming to me. Hank is President & Fellow of the American Society of Genealogists, and is a Fellow of the New York



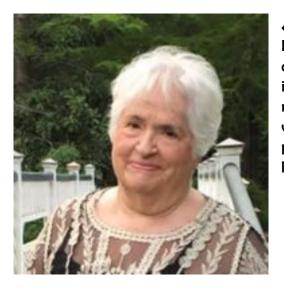
Genealogical & Biographical Society. After my progressing to about 25% of this project, his note of wonderful encouragement on March 21, 2017 was as follows:

E-mail 2017-03-21

I've read a lot of and then also skimmed some of your remarkable work in progress. I think the final product will be sensational. I was so pleased you have incorporated some of my initial suggestions: you're writing a very human book, not dry at all. It's hard to do, but from what I've read so far you tell a darn good story. You ARE the star, but you've could make so many others come to life also; we see how your family and friends have helped mold you into the man you are today. Love those photos especially.

As I noted earlier, when completed it will be a lively legacy shared with those who know and love you - and others even yet to be born. That's a nice thought, isn't it? I wouldn't change a thing so far ... you're on the right path. Keep up the great work! And thanks for your passing on the story of your 66 years of being a Christian. Obviously, you've lived up to what you believe - congrats! Best as always, Hank Jones

On February 7, 2004, Hank was the keynote speaker at a <u>Dallas Genealogy Socie</u>ty Seminar at the <u>Civic Center</u> in Richardson, Texas. He and I met there. We have been in contact often over the years, and his genealogical advice has aided me greatly.



Jewell (Judy) Linn Shoup Shannon (Born

December 25, 1941) provided numerous photographs and connections of stories about the years in the 1950s in Dallas. In those years, she frequently was a part of many of the activities in my life. She and her parents were members of our church and friends of my parents. She often was my date to social events in our high school days.

Sharpe, Taylor Marcus (born 1965) is

our eldest son and child. His expertise has taught me much knowledge of computers and software development. As a resource for me in compiling this autobiography, Taylor's special contribution is his patient scanning of the collections of family photographs from which I could select for this work. Remarkably, he scanned thousands of photographs from which I could choose several hundred for this autobiography! Thank you so much, Taylor. He's the owner of a database software business, TMS Software, LLC.



Westmoreland, Betty Katherine

Covington (born 1936) is the mother of our son-in-law, Steven (Steve) O. Westmoreland, who

married our daughter, Tiffany Lenn Sharpe. After Steve's marriage to Tiffany, Betty conferred with me, sharing the extensive genealogical data available on their side of the family. Such information has represented a significant addition to my database, including going back to <u>William the Conqueror</u>. Particularly fun to realize is that Steve and Tiffany already were related as 34th cousins, four times removed to each other before they married! The ancestor in common for them was Eystein Glumralvarsson, a man of Norway (a Viking) who lived in

the 800s.

Westmoreland, Tiffany Lenn Sharpe

(born 1966) is our daughter. She has contributed the onerous task of providing grammar refinements and corrections for me. Tiffany is one of the most accomplished professional women (was a CPA), mother and wife that we have ever known. We are so pleased for her to be in our family. Without her, many more of my discrepancies would be



shown! Therefore, I greatly appreciate Tiffany for helping me shine in my composition!

Dedication

In a sense, this autobiography is dedicated to anyone with an interest in and a love for history and family genealogical heritages. My purpose for this writing, especially, is intended for and, therefore, is dedicated to my seven grandchildren!

I hope and desire in my heart that all of them will someday take the occasion to browse this entire document to secure an understanding of the heritage from which each of them descends. Many people of vast public reputation or well-known persona, both contemporarily and historically, have crossed paths with our family members, and I would like for these grandchildren to be aware of these connections. Here are these dear grandchildren, all of whom have brought great pleasure and joy to Suzanne and myself:

The five Westmoreland grandchildren, children of Steve & Tiffany, are:









Samuel Lee

Katherine Michelle Jack David

Twins Lily Taylor & Sarah Todd

The two Sharpe grandchildren, children of Todd & Carrie, are:



Luke Maxwell



Brooke Eden

Table of Contents

[Do a "Find Command" by Chapter number]

- Chapter 1 The Setting of Dwight Albert Sharpe
- Chapter 2 The Beginnings Ballinger, Texas
- Chapter 3 The First Big City Step Houston, Texas
- Chapter 4 Back Out to West Texas Sweetwater, Texas
- Chapter 5 Big D & the High School Years Dallas, Texas
- Chapter 6 College Days at Austin College, Sherman, Texas
- Chapter 7 College Days Employment
- Chapter 8 College Days at the University of Texas, Austin, Texas
- Chapter 9 First Post-College Occupation New Orleans, Louisiana
- Chapter 10 Meeting & Claiming the Woman of my Life: Suzanne Margaret Boggess
- **Chapter 11 Building Your Family with Spiritual Principles**
- Chapter 12 A Call to Saint Louis, Missouri
- Chapter 13 Coming Home to Texas (Dallas)
- Chapter 14 Graduating to Wise County, Texas as a Senior Citizen
- **Chapter 15 My Spiritual Journeys**
- **Chapter 16 My Political Journeys**
- **Chapter 17 My Genealogical Journeys**
- **Chapter 18 My Journalistic Endeavors**
- **Chapter 19 Nicholas Philip Trist U S Diplomat of Interesting Distinction**
- **Chapter 20 Sharpe Family Genealogy from German Palatines**
- **Chapter 21 Bradford Family Genealogy**
- **Chapter 22 Carpenter Family Line Genealogy**
- **Chapter 23 Dixon Family Line (First of our Family in Texas)**
- **Chapter 24 Kellogg Family Line**
- **Chapter 25 Chapman Family Line**
- Chapter 26 Abney Family Line (our longest direct line 47 Generations)
- **Chapter 27 The Rockefeller Family Line**
- **Chapter 28 McElroy Family Line**
- **Chapter 29 Heard Family Line**

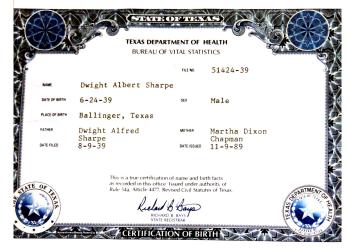
Chapter 30 Westmoreland Family Line Chapter 31 Boggess Family Line Chapter 32 Jumper Family Line **Chapter 33 My Father – The Rev. Mr. Dwight Alfred Sharpe** Chapter 34 My Father-in-Law – Mr. Thomas Shelton Boggess, Jr. Chapter 35 My Sister, Elizabeth Anne Sharpe Jumper Chapter 36 My Sister, Martha de Noailles Sharpe Ehlers Chapter 37 My Wealthy New York Relative, Willis Sharpe Kilmer Chapter 38 Our Family's Two Nobel Peace Prize Winners Chapter 39 Alfred Lansing Sharpe, First Republican in Texas Legislature Chapter 40 Our Family & the Four Greatest Documents of Governance Chapter 41 History of Four Fair Grounds in Noxubee County Mississippi **Chapter 42 Four Knights on A Charge – A 1929 Trip Out West** Chapter 43 The Saga of Irby Holt Boggess Chapter 44 Tales of Dr. John Thomas Taylor, a Boggess Family Dentist Chapter 45 Noah Webster, Lexicographer, Dictionary of 1828 **Chapter 46 George Washington, the Father of our Country** Chapter 47 Isaac Watts, the Father of English Hymnody **Chapter 48 First Thanksgiving Celebration in Texas – 1598 Chapter 49 The Plymouth Colony Thanksgiving Proclamation Chapter 50 My Story Telling Series** Chapter 51 Our Family's Connections to 17 of the 45 U.S. Presidents **Chapter 52 Connections to 63 British Monarchs & Some World Leaders** Chapter 53 Organizations of Which I Am a Member **Chapter 54 The Churches in My Life** Chapter 55 Smith Wigglesworth Chapter 56 George Eastman Chapter 57 Godwulf – My earliest lateral ancestor Chapter 58 The Legendary J. P. Morgan Chapter 59 My Mother, Martha Dixon Chapman Sharpe Chapter 60 My Mother-in-Law, Alice Loraine McElroy Boggess **Chapter 61 Our Family and the Chase National Bank** Chapter 62 Alfred the Great in our Family Chapter 63 William the Conqueror in our Family Chapter 64 Earliest Known Christian in our Family – King Ceawlin **Chapter 65 King James of the Bible**

- Chapter 66 Today's English Queen Elizabeth II
- Chapter 67 Movie Personality Clint Eastwood
- Chapter 68 Legendary Teddy Roosevelt, Soldier, President, Hunter
- Chapter 69 Teaching Our Children How Our Nation is Governed
- Chapter 70 Frith Lake Social Club
- **Chapter 71 Preparing for Graduation to Heaven**
- Chapter 72 Publications & Magazines to Which I Subscribe
- **Chapter 73 Directory of Relatives**
- Chapter 74 Conclusion

Chapter 1 The Setting of Dwight Albert Sharpe

Born June 24, 1939, I am privileged to have been born a fifth-generation Texan, my great, great grandfather, Judge Felix Benedict Dixon

immigrated from Ohio to Texas in 1841, when Texas was still an independent nation. His parents had come from West Virginia. My lineage also has roots going back early in America as a sixth-generation United States citizen, being a descendant of American Revolutionary soldier, Lt. George P.



<u>Sharp</u>, of the New York Militia, who is my third great grandfather. George's grandfather, Jacob Scherp, had migrated in 1710 with a group of some 3,000 German Palatines. Finally, English family connections make me a 10th generation American. <u>Plymouth Colony Gov. William Bradford</u>, who came with the Pilgrims on the Mayflower to establish Plymouth Colony in 1620, is my seventh great grandfather.



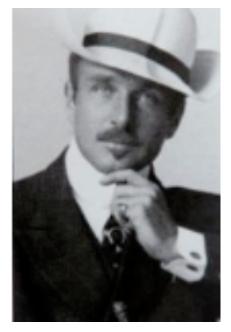
The historical genealogical interests in my life will describe the various family lineages, all of which have European, English and Scandinavian connections. My direct lineage through my mother's family goes back to a 38th great grandfather, <u>Gor Thorrasson</u>, who lived in the 600s. That is in our Abney line. It is believed he was what was called a <u>Viking</u>. He lived where we know today as Norway. The earliest ancestor through my Shape family line is my 7th grandfather, <u>Otto Scherp</u>, a man who lived among <u>German Palatines</u> in the 1600s in

. It was his grandson, Jacob, who emigrated to America in 1710.

There are lateral relationships to *17 of the 45 U.S. Presidents*. Relationship claim can be made for the first six U.S. Presidents, and all four of the U.S. Presidents sculptured onto Mount Rushmore. Jerry Ford was the only College football star (Michigan, 2 undefeated titles in 1932 and 1933) who has served as President He also is the only President who ever worked professionally as a men's fashion model.



One man particularly interesting in the Sharpe lineage was Willis Sharpe Kilmer, my half second cousin, once removed! Here is a 30-page report on Willis and his ancestry. He bore no children. He lived 1868 – 1940. The newspaper article shortly following his 1940 death estimated his estate to be worth some \$10 to \$15 Million. He was a raiser of horses, and owned the 1918 Kentucky Derby Winner, Exterminator. He was a marketing man, and is credited with fashioning the first nationwide newspaper advertising program. It was promoting a cure-all ailment ointment liquid named "Swamp Root." Some charge that its popularity stemmed from the fact that its alcoholic content was 10%. The Kilmer Building, 141 Chenango Street, built in 1903, was originally



used as the home of the Kilmer product, Swamp Root. It was at the corner of Chenango and Lewis Streets in Binghamton, New York.

Willis lived in a generation of and in physical proximity of another of our Sharpe family relatives. <u>John Davidson Rockefeller, Sr</u>., who lived 1839 – 1937. Both lived in New York State, and developed much of the wealth each experienced from New York sources or beginnings.



Another Rockefeller relative of ours, <u>John</u> <u>Davidson Rockefeller, Jr</u>., donated the \$8,500,000 to purchase the. Manhattan land on where the United Nations building was erected. His father, born in a modest one room rural



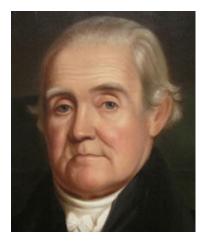
cabin, who rose to be considered at one time the wealthiest man in the world, <u>John Davidson</u>

<u>Rockefeller, Sr</u>. is a star in our family line. The father

and son are depicted in the photo here.

<u>Nelson Aldrich Rockefeller</u> is the fourth grandnephew of Johann Philip Rockefeller, the husband of Catherina Sharp. Philip and Catherina are my third grand aunt and uncle. Catherina is the granddaughter of Jacob A. Scherp, the German immigrant who come to America in 1710. Nelson's highest office served was as Vice President of the United States in the President Gerald Ford administration. Gerald R. Ford, the 38th President of the United States, is the 17th cousin, four times removed, to President James Monroe. President Monroe is my 31st cousin, twice removed. The ancestors in common with President Monroe and me are Eystein Glumra Ivarsson and Aseda Rognvaldsdatter, ninth century Vikings of Norway. They are President Monroe's 30th great grandparents, and my 32nd great grandparents. President Monroe is the 18th cousin, seven times removed to my son-in-law, Steven O. Westmoreland.

From 519 AD, down through our family shows lateral <u>relationships with British</u> <u>Monarchs</u> for all but 80 years during those almost 1,500 years. It has all been exciting to me to learn of these things.



For those of you interested in spelling, please know that there is a lateral cousin relationship with American lexicographer, <u>Noah Webste</u>r, my <u>third</u> <u>cousin, five times removed</u>. He is the Arthur of a famous Dictionary published in 1828. The unique character was that so many definitions included Biblical references.

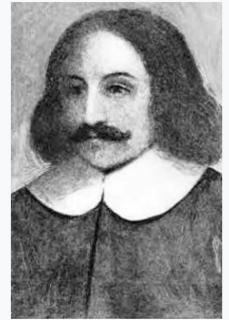
The study and pursuit of genealogy and history has been an interest of mine since about 1978. I heard of some historical information, both about my family and about that of my wife, <u>Suzanne Boggess Sharpe</u>. Then I learned of some interesting history on my father's side of the family. So, I was drawn to learn more about the history in our family lines, and thus the pursuit began.



Another icon of American Industry is <u>Mr. J. P. Morgan</u>, the founder of U.S. Steel. <u>John Pierpont Morgan</u>, born April 17, 1837, lived till March 31, 1913, (known best simply as J. P. Morgan) is <u>my fourth cousin</u>, three times <u>removed</u>. The ancestor in common with us is Samuel Spencer (1670 - 1756), my sixth great grandfather, and Morgan's third great grandfather. It has since come to my realization that a knowledge of your heritage helps give understanding to who you are and what may have shaped why your family is like they are! One aspect, which has been of interest to me, is to capture information about what Christian heritage and experience my family had.

In 591, English King Ceawlin, received Christian Baptism. He is the earliest member of our family's ancestry <u>that claimed</u> <u>Christianity</u>, over 1,400 years ago. <u>Pope</u> <u>Gregory</u> had sent a missionary from Rome circa 591, named Father Columba. King Ceawlin is the 35th great grandfather of <u>Edward Southworth</u>, a British upper class noble whose first wife was <u>Alice Carpenter</u>. After Edward died, Alice went to the New World, to the Plymouth Colony at the beckoning of the Colony's <u>Governor, William</u> <u>Bradford</u>.

She and William married in what was the fourth marriage in that New World Colony. She and William became my seventh great grandparents. King Ceawlin is the 18th great grandfather of my fourteenth great uncle, Englishman Edward Southworth, the first husband of Alice Carpenter. After Edward died, Alice married Plymouth Colony Governor William Bradford. They became William Bradford



A conjectural image of Bradford, produced as a postcard in 1904 by A.S. Burbank of Plymouth.^[1]

my 7th great grandparents. King Ceawlin, because of his lineage down through that of my son-in-law, Steven O. Westmoreland of Wise County, Texas, is the 49th great grandfather of my grandchildren, Kate, Jack and twins Lily and Sarah Westmoreland; and youngest son, Sam.



[better source needed][9]

Total: 828,000+ casualties

50,000 free civilians dead^[11] 80,000+ slaves dead^[12] Total: 785,000–1,000,000+ dead^{[13][14]}

casualties

The War Between the States (generically called the Civil War) was the most terrible conflict to have happened to the United States. Here is a statistically summary.

The Presidents of the two waring jurisdictions were <u>Abraham</u> <u>Lincoln</u> and <u>Jefferson Davis</u>. Several military generals led the respective armies who are listed here. Note that two of them were General <u>George B. McClellan</u> for the North and General <u>Robert E.</u> <u>Lee</u> for the South. To reflect the tendency of our ancestors to be leaders in whatever circles they worked and moved, you should notice that all four of these men cited here as leaders were cousins of mine!

The Union forces were a little more than twice the size of the South. However, the North suffered more total deaths: 365,000 versus 290,000. Total dead from all causes were 785,000 to 1,000,000. We have not suffered so many deaths in any other prior or subsequent military engagements. It was a terrible event to happen among our people! The early years of genealogy for me were spent contacting known relatives by mail or phone to learn what they knew, and the directions to which they could point me. Visits to libraries and courthouses began to take place in areas where it was understood that the family lines had lived at one time or another. There were lots of walks through old cemeteries, and the camera became a recording tool for capturing information.

Later, efforts were captured, using computer software and research on the Internet. The research has enabled the accumulation of records on over 9,000 relatives, including over 3,100 marriages. That was a lot in my thinking, until meeting a professional genealogist who has files of relatives up in the five figures!

The <u>personal web site</u> (<u>www.dasharpe.com</u>) has been a source of other genealogists discovering, through online search process, that the Sharpe family information can relate to them. They make contact mostly by the e-mail address posted, but occasionally by phone as well. Being publicity shy is not in my bag of concerns, so the public exposure of that information brings far more benefit than has anything been unpleasant.

I encourage people to become interested in their family histories, and to record them, not only for their own self-enjoyment, but also for the benefit of their children, grandchildren and the descendants even after that. Identify those relatives you have who are oldest, and interview them to write their thoughts and recollections, while they still have good cognizance. They and the other people related to your family lines will appreciate your provision of these marvelous facts and stories in an organized format.

Chapter 2 The Beginnings – Ballinger, Texas

Nestled in the southern end of <u>Runnels County, Texas</u> is the convergence of the <u>Colorado Rive</u>r and the <u>Elm Creek</u>, at the city <u>of Ballinger</u>, a small community of some 4,400 people in the 1940 U.S. Census. It boasted a handful of main line churches, one of which was the <u>First Presbyterian Church</u>. Its pastor was my father, the <u>Rev. Mr. Dwight Alfred Sharpe</u>, a second-generation Texas native from Georgetown and a 1925 graduate of the <u>University of Texas at Austin</u> and a 1926 graduate of the <u>Austin Presbyterian Theological Seminary</u>, located in Austin as well. Mr. Sharpe's wife, my mother, was Martha Dixon Chapman



Sharpe, a native of Lufkin, TX, and a 1926 graduate of UT as well, which is where the met. Their family consisted of two daughters, Martha and Elizabeth, who were born in 1927 and 1929. The family had moved to Ballinger in 1936. This was a photo used in our family's

Christmas Card in 1936.

My life in Ballinger was from my 1939 birth till 1941. Bursting upon the scene of the Sharpe family was what was to become their one and only son, Mr. Dwight Albert Sharpe. He was brought kicking and screaming into the world of West Texas in the city's hospital on that fateful day of June 24, 1939. The event was the stir in town, as this was one of the stalwart pillars of that community. That was the beginning of my life, which has a history of being greatly blessed in God's good providence! Since my father's calling in the ministry brought a move of our family in the summer of 1941 to serve the Central Park Presbyterian Church in southeast Houston, near the Ship



Yards, my recollections of Ballinger living are blank! They rely only upon hearsay evidence.



Here's my Mother, giving comfort to me, shortly after delivery. On the right, here is the occasion of my first hair cut!



My father's continued close connection with Austin Presbyterian Theological

<u>Seminary</u> included having one of its famed faculty members, Dr. Samuel Joeckel, travel to my home church in Ballinger to administer water baptism to me on September 11, 1939 when I as about three months old. He was on a preaching mission at a near-by country church. Here is a photograph of Dr. Joeckel and my two sisters, Elizabeth Ann (L) and Martha.

The Clerk of Session of the First Presbyterian Church of



Ballinger, Ms. Judy Eaves, provided me with a copy in 2016 of their listing of baptisms during the years one mine took place.

That not only gave me the date of my baptism, but two other names of interest were noticed. First, my first cousin, Harry Franklin Sharpe, was baptized March 20, 1937. Harry's father, Harry Simons (Dede) Sharpe, and my father were brothers. Harry and his parents lived In Georgetown, Texas, also my father's hometown. I'd never realized that they'd traveled to Ballinger for my father to baptize Harry.



Secondly, a boy named Tom Guin was baptized in 1938, the year before me. I met Tom (L) when he was a sophomore at Austin College in Sherman, Texas, the year I was a freshman there (R), 1957-58. We were fellow Drake Fraternity brothers! It's a small world, isn't it?



	STER OF BAPTISMS	ereto. The names of brace the names musice.	If the child has been baptised has been skasher baptised, an he shall be received into ful
NAMES	PARENTS' NAMES	WHEN BORN	WHEN BAPTISED CA THI
McLaurin, Lauchlin Arthur Fryar, John Madison, Boggess, Clyde Blake Dunlap, Samuel Alexander Miller, Robert von Rosenberg Boggess, Milton Eldon Zedlitz, William Halley Stasney, Stella Ann Sturges, Margaret Lynn Stainback, James Eugene	Rev. & Mrs. E. W. McLaurin Mr. & Mrs. Albert Fryar Mr. & Mrs. M. E. Boggess Mr. & Mrs. Samuel A. Dunlap Mr. & Mrs. Q. V. Miller Mr. & Mrs. Q. V. Miller Mr. & Mrs. R. F. Boggess Mr. & "rs. R. F. Zedlitz Dr. & Mrs. E. W. Stasney Mr. & Mrs. J. C. Sturges Jr. Mr. & Mrs. Floyd L. Stainback	Jap, 27, 1933 Nov. 8, 1932 Oct 2, 1932 Apr.29, 1929 Oct.16, 1933 Feb. 18,1934 May 5, 1932 Mar.16, 1936 Apr. 17, 1936 Oct. 18, 1932	Apr. 16, 1933 Apr. 16, 1933 Apr. 16, 1933 Apr. 16, 1933 May 13, 1934 Apr. 21, 1935 Apr. 21, 1935 May 10, 1936 May 17, 1936 Jan. 24, 1937
Zedlitz, Virginia Ruth Sharpe, Harry Franklin	Lr. & Mrs. R. F. Zedlitz	July 6, 1936	Mar. 28, 1937
Trimmier, Walter agend Fury, Marcus Bell, Ellen Virginia Helwig, Jean Northington, K. V. Jr. Northington, Robert Henlee	Mr. & Mrs. Paul Trimmierbrok Mr. & Mrs. C. J. Bell Mr. & Wrs. K. V. Northington Mr. & Mrs. K. V. Northington Mr. & Mrs. Neil G. McAlpine	Cov. 1, 1921 App. 31, 197 Poo. 10, 197 Poo. 10, 1907 Apy. 215 -1924 Detr 1945-1926	Mar. 28, 1937 Apr. 4, 1937 Dec. 19, 1937 Dec. 19, 1937 Dec. 19, 1937 Dec. 19, 1937 Dec. 26, 1937
Mollpine, Martha Neil Grim, Tom Henry	Mr. & Mrs. Tom Guin Mr. & Mrs. K. V. Northington	Sept. 11, 1937 Feb. 12, 1939	- 1938 9~~ × 1939
Henniger, Ruth Ann Sharpe, Dwight Albert	Mr. & Mrs. L. W. Henniger Rev, & Mrs. Dwight A, Sharpe	Feb. 3, 1939	9.24 1939 Sept. 11,1939
Hall, Malcolm Wardlaw Willer, Margaret Jane, CAlpine, Robert Edward	Mr. & Mrs. R. T. Hall Mr. and Mrs. Q. V. Miller, Jr. Mr. and Mrs. Neil McAlpine	Sept. 11, 1940 Apr. 21, 1947	Tetr. 24, 1940 Dec. 22, 1940 Feb. 16, 1941
tasney, Edward Wardlaw,	Dr. & Mrs. E. W Stasney Forwarded	Aug. 10.1941	Sept. 14, 1941

This is the Baptisms List from the Sessional Records of the First Presbyterian Church, Ballinger, Texas, 1933 - 1941



Here is my first Christmas. This would have been December 25, 1939.

The boy's name, Dwight, is pronounced as it rhymes with light. It is of Flemish origin, and its meaning is "white or blond." It is a variant of DeWitt. Possibly it could be a short form of the surname derived from Dionysius. Dwight was given fame in the United States by two Yale University presidents, and by United States President Dwight David Eisenhower. My first name comes from my father and my great Uncle Dwight Sharpe of Chicago, whom I never saw. My middle name, Albert, is immediately from my Uncle Herschell Albert Chapman (my Mother's brother and only sibling), but it also goes back to my great grandfather, William Albert Abney, Sr. The only time I ever saw Uncle Herschell was when my Mother and I visited him and his wife, Gertrude,

in <u>Oakland, California</u> in 1940, the summer of my first birthday. They all visited the World's Fair of San Francisco that was exhibiting at the time. Of course, I can't remember it, but the photographs Mom kept around a while gave me memories of the trip and of my Aunt and Uncle.



Taking place at the time of that only visit to Uncle Albert, was the <u>Golden Gate</u> <u>International</u> <u>Exposition held 1939-</u> <u>40, a World's Fair</u> celebrating the newly built. This spectacular almost five-mile long bridge spanned the

San Francisco–Oakland Bay Bridge



Oakland Bay and the entrance into the Pacific Ocean. It opened in 1936, so we were among the earlier travelers to cross that famous bridge in the summer of 1940! The crossing enabled us to visit the World's Fair grounds. It became the only World's Fair I have ever attended!



Uncle Herschell was a successful insurance salesman who prospered so that my mother was said that he always drove a <u>Packard automobile</u>, one of the luxury cars of that era, whose production ran from 1899 through 1958. That 1940 visit to California was the one and only time ever I was in the presence of Uncle Herschell and Aunt Gertrude. He died in 1952 and she in 1983, never bearing any children. California was so far away from us in the patterns in which we moved that we never got out there again. Gertrude did have a first marriage and had a child or children, but I have no records of them.



An interesting aspect about that June of 1940 visit to Oakland, California was that my genealogical friend, <u>Mr.</u> <u>Henry Z. (Hank) Jones, Jr.</u>, whom I'd meet some 64 years later, and from whom much valuable genealogical information was learned, was born in Oakland that very same month, June 4, 1940, that my mother and myself, her one-year-old son, were in Oakland! There could have been Divine destiny for me to be there when Hank came into the world! Hank, professionally, is an entertainer and film actor, having appeared in several Walt Disney movies, etc. Another common thread with us was both having been Deacons in the Presbyterian Church at various times.



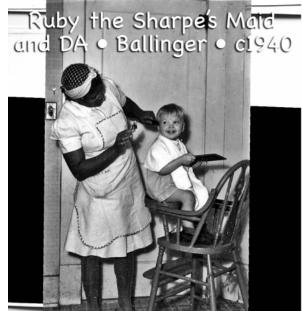


At some point in our family's life, which I believe began in our Ballinger years, my father took up the hobby of photography, including the developing of film and prints in his own home-made "dark room." One of the most memorable aspects of that hobby

became the annual Christmas Cards he designed and mailed to their

friends and to the church members.

Here's a photograph of the family's household caretaker, Ruby, as she is giving me some hair care!





Above, here, is Nick, our family pet, joining me for lunch!

When my father accepted a call to become pastor of the Central Park Presbyterian Church in Houston, Texas, 1941, the people in the congregation of the First Presbyterian Church of Ballinger gathered the funds in many gifts to provide a 1941 2-door Chevrolet sedan as a going away present for our family. That was in March 1941.



That was again an instance of God's provision and protection for our family repeatedly over the years. The family's current automobile was an early 1930s model that may have been on its last legs (or wheels!). The other aspects of this Devine gift were that World War II broke out December 7, 1941. One of the many changes affecting American life was the cessation of passenger car manufacturing. The automobile industry capacity was re-directed to assembling vehicles for military use. It wasn't until the mid and later 1940s that passenger cars were back on the market in quantity. Our family's old vintage car probably would not have lasted through the war years! Here is a photo of my mother by our car shortly after arriving in Houston in 1941. **Ballinger** was one of those small west Texas towns that has not grown over the years. It's population for when we resided there of 4,400 had declined by 2016 to about 3,700. It's current day ethnicity is 61% Anglo, 34% Hispanic and 5% other races. Its household income is about \$27,000, whereas the state-wide household income is about \$51,000.

Chapter 3 The First Big City Step – Houston, Texas

The occasion for my family to move from Ballinger, Texas down to the largest city in Texas at the time, Houston, in Harris County, was that my father, the Rev. Dwight Alfred Sharpe, received a call to become the Pastor of the Central Park Presbyterian Church, located at 6914 Sherman Avenue. That is in the southeast portion of Houston, down near the Houston Ship Channel, a center for major industrial activity. The Sharpe's moved to Houston in June 1941, living first in Central Park at 6916 Sherman, in the church-owned home (or the Manse, it's

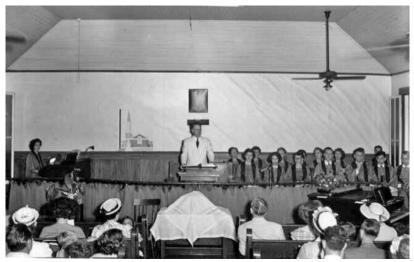


called). We lived in Houston from 1941 until 1951.

The constituency of the church's membership had a few professional occupations among them, but primarily the congregation members were a blue collar industrial worker base, including labor union workers, etc. The church's address was 6914 Sherman, next door to us.

The driveway you see, facing the church, on the left, is the driveway to the automobile garage for our church-owned home, called a Manse. We certainly were walking distance from our Church!

This is a view of the inside of the sanctuary of the Central Park Presbyterian Church. This photo has my father preaching in his summer whites, while the younger of my two older sisters, Elizabeth (or Betty Ann, as we called her – born in 1929) was the church organist during her high school and early college years. The date of this photo may have been about 1946 or so. My older sister,



Martha, would have been in the choir, but these faces are too small to identify specifically.

Vaguely, I recall our early months living in Houston, partly because our pet dog, Nick the Fox Terroir, moved with us. However, Nick did not adjust well in our home. Additionally, Nick seemed to have trouble relating to the Postal Mail Man and to the Milk Delivery Man, both of whom came to our home most days of the week. The family made the difficult decision to send Nick back to Ballinger to the home of Ruby, the faithful lady who had been our maid during the years there. To our knowledge, Nick lived out a nice and restful life with Ruby!

For Christmas 1942, My grandfather, Henry (Harry) Seth Sharpe, a resident of Georgetown, TX since about 1895, came to visit us in Houston! Being three years old, my memory does not do justice to recalling. I presume that he, whom we canned "Papa Sharpe," visited by himself. His wife, Mattie de **Noailles Simons (Mama** Sharpe), died in February 1944. Possibly she had health limitations by that time which could be why she is absent in the photograph. Seated in the photo, from left to right were my father, mother, my sister

Sharpe Christmas C Houston with Papa Sharpe C 1942



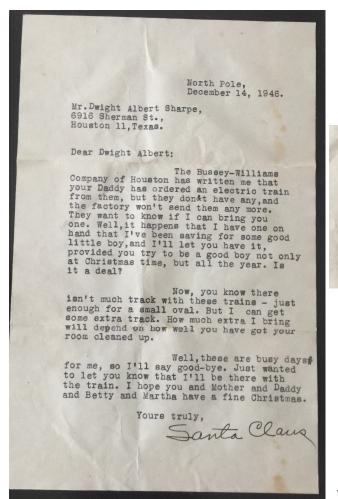


(Martha) and me on the floor, Papa Sharpe seated, with my sister, Betty Anne.

Though my Mother was trained at the University of Texas for the teaching profession, she maintained the task of being a pastor's wife, mother and wife until the World War II years. With such school teacher shortages, she took up public school teaching a while. My kindergarten year in school would have been 1944 - 1945. They placed me in a Mrs. Fink's Private School, which was a large room in her home. It was unique, in the sense that the one room educated about 30 students

ranging from kindergarten through the sixth grade! That certainly was a memorable experience. I remember the large number of swing sets in her back yard.

In 1949, the church grew substantially enough to warrant purchasing land at 7000 Lawndale Avenue in east Houston, and erected a new church building. It was a significant move in the life of the people in the congregation. The name was changed to Trinity Presbyterian Church.



As a young grammar school age boy in those years, it can be said that the Christian influences and expectations in my family were of such reality that never in my life has the idea of God not existing entered my thinking. I have



always believed in God's creation of our world and about His Son being Jesus Christ, the one in whom it was necessary for us to believe was God manifested on earth as His Son, and that the Holy Spirit functioned in our lives to guide us in God's will for our lives. At the age of 11, I took a class, taught by my Father, about being a Christian and

joining the Church. On

Palm Sunday, March 18, 1951, at about 10:00 AM, I answered my father's questions about believing in Jesus Christ as Lord and Savior. It was a convincing decision, and never did I waver from believing such, even under the influences of the atmospheres encountered later in days of being a college student.

Mention was made in the Ballinger Chapter about my father's developing hobby of photography. One of the



overt legacies we have today of that hobby is the collection of Christmas cards he did to mail to our friends annually. Many of the copies I now possess were given to me by Jann Alford Harper (her married surname). She was a child, born in 1943 into a family who were members of the Central Park Presbyterian Church in Houston, Texas where my father was their pastor. Her parents, the Alfords, and my parents apparently had a close friendship, and the Alfords admired Dad's Christmas Cards, collecting them over the years. The first ones they should have begun receiving would be Christmas 1941, our first Christmas in Houston.

Due to the marvels of social media, Jann discovered my Facebook account, because of the similarity of my name and my father's, whom she recalled. She contacted me in 2009, and we became Facebook friends. She told me of the Christmas Card collection of my father's that had come down to her after her parents graduated to Heaven. She gladly gave them to me, and that the major source of those cards that I have. When Suzanne and I had occasion to be in Galveston a year or two later, we contacted Jann and her husband, Kermit, who reside in near-by Friendwood, Texas. We arranged to meet at a restaurant for a meal. What fun it was to make connection, and to visit after some 60 years. Jann was age 9 and I was age 12 when our family moved away from Houston in 1951!

My father pursued a nice gesture which added to the validity of the existence of Santa Claus. His plan for my major Christmas present in 1946 was an 8' X 4' raised plywood table for a Lionel Lines electric train set, complete with a set of remote control track switches for a siding. It was questionable whether the ordered set would arrive in time for Christmas morning, so Daddy had a letter sent to me, advising that the gift was on the way!

As it turned out, the train did arrive in time for a joyous Christmas morning acceptance on my part. My regret is not being able to locate photographs of the event. However, the letter and envelope has been prepared and is shown you in this Chapter.

D. A. (as I was called to differentiate from my father, who was called Dwight) entered Ben Franklin Elementary School in the fall of 1945, and attended there for the first through fourth grades. The principal was Mr. John Hood. Apparently, it no longer exists today (2017), as I could not identify it on the Internet.

Here is a photo of my father and me beside the automobile that had been the gift of the First Presbyterian Church of Ballinger, TX, as our family departing gift in moving to Houston. This photo was taken about 1945 or 46. In 1947, we acquired a 1947 Chevy.

My third and fourth grade music teacher at Franklin



Elementary School was Mrs. Pauline Keeley. That school no longer exists. She was a member of our church, Central Park Presbyterian Church, and active in its music ministry. She was a single Mom, having had a divorce years earlier. She and her daughter, Clarice Keeley Barnes Amann, born in 1934, was a teenage friend of my two older sisters, born in 1927 and 1929, Martha and Elizabeth. I'm still friends (on Facebook) with Clarice. In 2017, she reviewed some of this autobiography and greatly aided with some recollections, which I quote here.

"My mother taught 5th & 6th grades there before she became the music teacher and move later to Hartman Junior High.

"Your father enlisted my mother as the choir director shortly after you all became a part of the church, apparently. She was willing to do it for free, but Dwight & the elder who came with him to discuss it, insisted on paying her the grand sum of \$25 a month. This was wonderful for us as it paid for our \$18 a month apartment plus some! I remember how awed and blessed Mother felt after they left. She could hardly sleep that night.

"My mother considered your mother to be a dear friend. She would often visit her at the manse*. You mother encouraged my mother not to reveal her divorce since that was such a negative during those days. Mother never lied, but did not correct people who thought my father had been killed in the war.

"As for being a friend of your sisters, I was more an admirer! They were so OLD, SMART & WISE! Martha even "babysat" me a couple of times, with your mother

nearby. That may have been the time you & I climbed the near-by tree.

"The car we owned was a 1936 Ford Coupe. We (or I) named her "Betsy". We traveled many miles in her with my dog Lassie, a white Spitz. I think we finally sold her in 1949 or '50. I know I was heart broken because I was in West Texas visiting my cousin at the time and didn't get to say goodbye!

*The church owned house in

which a pastor and family resided was known in Presbyterian Church circles as a "manse."

My mother wanted me to learn piano, so she engaged Mrs. Keeley to give me private piano lessons in her home on Keller Avenue the summer of 1950. Alas, it

was not one of my excelling talents, so the training didn't continue. I did enjoy and appreciate Mrs. Keeley's efforts on my behalf.



I remember the automobile Mrs. Keeley had, which was such a neat one. It was an old 1936 Ford two-door coupe, only a 2-seater, with a four-on-the-floor shift stick. I thought she had the neatest car among all our friends! Here's a photo I found recently of a 1936 Ford!

Clarice was on the staff of Presbytery Offices, etc. Years later, she recognized my name on Facebook. So, we connected around 2014 or so as Facebook friends, and have been keeping up with each other that way. She is retired and residing in Kerrville, Texas. Her full name is Clarice Keeley Barnes Amann.

The pastor at Clarice's current <u>First Presbyterian Church of Kerrville</u> is the Rev. Mr. <u>Robert (Rob) Lohmeyer</u>, a friend of our family from when he was a young man, college student, etc., where his family were members of the <u>Highland Park</u> <u>Presbyterian Church</u>, and where I was on staff for 22 years as the Executive Administrator to the Senior Pastor. His college and seminary days was when I was there.



The first vision I ever had about what might become my adult occupation came in the 1940's. It was to be a garbage man! Our modern terminology calls it a <u>waste</u> <u>collector</u>! I used to sit in our front yard on the couple times a week the neighborhood City of Houston garbage truck was scheduled to collect from our block. My admiration was great for the skill and strength of the men who wrestled with our filled garbage cans, tossing them from the ground up to the man catching the cans up



in the truck. That guy, wearing fisherman's type rubber pants, up to his waist, stood in the deep garbage, catching the tossed cans and dumping them around himself. Then he tossed the empty can to the man on the ground who always would perform a magnificent catch of the emptied can, replacing it in its rightful place at our front curb!

The next profession that became a goal was that of being a fire fighter. This developed for a couple of reasons. First, during World War II years, there was some reason, which I forget now, that citizens were urged to collect newspapers that somehow helped in the war effort for the nation. We were to take them to your local fire station. I took on that beckoning for service of my community by going from house-to-house in our neighborhood, asking people for their old newspapers. I pulled a wagon around with me to haul the donations. Then, my father would take me and an accumulated load of newspapers to the fire station. The firemen receiving the newspapers show the public's appreciation for my efforts by treating me to guided tours around the fire station and allowing me to climb all over the fire trucks! An enforcement of my fireman profession goal was nurtured when there were two or three occasions not far from our home where home fires required the firemen to come. Watching them deal with the flame challengers was just so engrossing to me. I could hardly wait to become one of them!

Jumping forward a few decades, that fireman dream became a sort of reality! Having now a family, living in University City, Missouri (a suburb of Saint Louis), we were there 1972 – 1982 when our children were in grammar school, etc. At one point, a public recruitment went out through the schools for fathers to volunteer to be firemen for the University City Fire Department. Of course, I came forth to volunteer. More can be read about that adventure.

The first serious occupation of which I did dream was that of a professional dancer! It was the famous musical movies in the 1940's that I first saw, such as Gene Kelly in "<u>Singing in the Rain</u>." That was one of our family's favorite movies.

A life of crime in my life was averted, fortunately, early in my grammar school years. Along about the 3rd or 4th grade in school, a fascination developed about the thrill experienced from sneaking items from retail stores, concealed in my clothing (called shop-lifting)! These primarily were toys. It grew out of unwise response to being dared by peers that I wouldn't have the courage to do it.





The Henke & Pillot grocery store, the Sears, Roebuck & Company and the Walgreen's Drug Store were the near-by three businesses where my criminal activity took place. Obviously, I couldn't reveal these stolen items at home, as my family would know there were insufficient funds available for me to acquire them. So, the stolen goods were hidden in a place along the alleyway, behind our home.

I came upon cross purposes with a neighborhood school chum who had discovered the location of the purloined items. He retrieved some of them, and brought them into our home at dinner time, placing them in front of my father, indicating they were things I'd stolen! Well the immediate period following that was most unpleasant for me, and I became acquainted with what was being truly repentant! My father took me to visit the managers of each store, confessing to stealing the items, and returning them, during an expression of sincere and deep regret and apology! It was a great relief to me when each store manager failed to call in the Police to jail me!

The last visit was with the Walgreen's Store manager, down on Harrisburgh Boulevard, near Wayside Boulevard, who spent a good deal of time talking with me and encouraging me "to straighten up and to fly right!" He manifested his acceptance of my repentance by escorting me and my father to the lunch counter in that store, and treating us to ice cream sundaes! I'll always remember the experience of that degree of forgiveness shown by a man who had been a stranger just minutes earlier. This experience is just another in the path of life to which I was being privileged to live in the Christian family of the Sharpe's. God was showing me, early in life, that He loved me, and would use me, if I would yield to him. A lesson well learned! The fifth grade was at <u>Park Place</u> <u>Elementary School</u> in southeast Houston. It's been replaced by new construction. We lived at 8010 Grafton, just west of Broadway Boulevard. The wing on the left side of the house has been added since we lived there. My bedroom was the upper right room!



The sixth grade was at <u>Brisco Elementary School</u> near the newly constructed (in 1949) Trinity Presbyterian Church at 7000 Lawndale where my father was the pastor. The church had changed names from Central when it relocated. We lived on Erath Street, near <u>Mason Park</u>, a city park which had one of the most



wonderful Olympic-size public pools. It was located immediately east of Forest Park Lawndale Cemetery

An interesting thing is that these were the days

before much in the way of school buses being available. Generally, most of the students in my schools not far away. Students walked to school or rode bicycles. Very few students arrived in automobiles. For one thing, in this last half of the 1940's, some parents didn't own cars, and they rode public transportation to their jobs. Another condition was that the market for cars was slim. Passenger car production had been suspended in favor of production for World War II needs, and the first ones weren't begun till after the war, in general. Most families owning automobile transportation had only one vehicle. It usually went to work with Dad!

It was a different world, in the sense that not much fear existed about children walking to and from school alone. Much of the time, they would walk in small groups. I never rode a school bus in my life until I was a high school student in 1955 in Dallas.

Another situation encountered these post WWII years was the growing existence of immigrants. Many of them came as <u>refugees</u>, escape from war-torn Europe and the Pacific war zones. They were people seeking the democracy and freedom practiced in the United States, and were becoming good citizens in our midst. However, we did not always understand some of their mores about acting among each other. One day, while walking from school with a fellow student, we fell into an argument that became a fist fight in the vacant lot near our homes. This student, from a newly-arrived German refugee immigrant family, was getting the best of me in the fight. I began wishing the whole matter had been avoided, but that was too late!

It was with smug relief that I saw his father and older sister approaching the vacant lot. At last, I reasoned, they were coming to stop the fighting! *Wrong!* When they arrived, they simply stood there, and watched while their son finished beating me in the fight! WOW! What a lesson for me to learn that not always were things necessarily fair and equal, even with parents or family present.



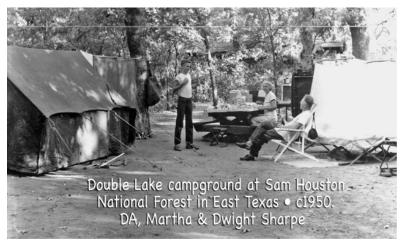
When my family lived in Houston (1941-1951), there were many occasions for us to visit my mother's relatives, who lived some 125 miles to the north in <u>Lufkin</u>, <u>Angelina County</u>, Texas. My favorite was relative was great Uncle Jim. James A. Abney <u>owned a hardware store</u> (a merchant pursuit seen for several generations of Abney's there). Uncle Jim would take me to his store to see the many marvelous things displayed.

The highlight experience was when Uncle Jim reached up to the gun racks in the store, and gave me my first <u>Daisy Red</u> <u>Rider BB gun!</u> I was about nine years old at the time. I

thought I'd come to Hog Heaven! (I think that's an old East Texas expression)!



While we lived in Houston, one of the vacations we took several of the years was to the <u>Double Lake Recreation</u> area. It was in the National Forests & Grasslands of Texas (Sam Houston National Park) in a triangle formed by Huntsville,



Livingston and Conroe, Texas. We would take our tents and sleeping cots, as well as our cooking-out equipment, to camp for a week or so. There are many fond memories in my thoughts about camping near that lake in which we swam, fished, and around which we hiked in the woods. I recall in the somewhat primitive times there in the 1940s, we would relieve ourselves by marching to a narrow open pit in the woods among the cover of foliage, straddling the pit, as we accomplished the task at hand! That's about as delicately as I can describe it!

Our connections to visiting Lufkin and the cousins there, etc., had to do with the fact that Lufkin was where my mother, Martha Dixon Chapman, was born April 5, 1904, to Margaret Levina Abney and Dr. James Herschell Chapman. Martha lived in Lufkin till going off to the University of Texas. Mom lost her Mother to Yellow Fever in 1909, and her father died in 1925. Having lost her parents at her age of 5 and 21, there never was occasion for me to know those grandparents.

My two sisters were <u>Martha de Noailles Sharpe</u> and <u>Elizabeth Anne Sharpe</u>, 12 and 10 years older than me. Both my sisters were active in the high school student fellowship at our Central Park Presbyterian Church, and our mother was an adult sponsor of the high school and college age group. What I remember most about those groups were the summer trips we took to Galveston as a church youth group. We'd spend the day on the beach and the evening at the nightlife and carnival rides after the day at the beach. They were fond memories. I especially remember the thrills riding the roller coasters! Again, I was in the early grammar school years when these things took place.

Martha de Noailles Sharpe was born September 7, 1927. She is the elder of my two sisters, the only siblings of mine. The 1927 year of Martha's birth was a whirlwind year for the nation. Frank Billings Kellogg, U.S. Secretary of State, proposed a pact for reunification of the world powers to conclude the loose strings remaining from World War I. It was finally agreed to the following year and became known as the Kellogg-Briand Pact. His accomplishments with that pact earned him the <u>1929 Nobel Peace Prize</u>. Frank is Martha's sixth cousin, twice removed.

Martha was born in Laredo, Texas where her father was in his first pastorate as a Presbyterian Minister. It was the First Presbyterian Church.

Martha's middle name, de Noailles, is an interestingly beautiful French middle name found in this very non-French family. From where it came into our family is a mystery. However, oral tradition has it that the name was taken from a friend of the family. The name appears as the middle name for Martha's grandmother, Mattie de Noailles Simons Sharpe, as well as in her second great grandmother, Anastasia (Fannie) de Noailles Lafayette Hewlett. If the friend of the family story is correct, the friend was probably that of the parents of Fannie, who were Lemuel Green Hewlett and Rebecca J. Harvey, the parents living in Hopkins County, Kentucky at the time of the birth of Anastasia de Noailles Lafayette Hewlett (Fannie) and all her six siblings. Before Martha was three, the family moved to Little Rock, Arkansas in1929. Her father's call to his third pastorate was to Ballinger, Texas, 1935. These were the depths of the depression days of the economy in the United States, yet God's providence continued to give adequate sustenance for the family, including having a maid to help with the children and domestic chores of the home and for what was expected of a pastor's home.

By 1941, when there were three children in our family, we moved to

Pulaski Heights Presbyterian Little Rock, Arkansas



Houston, Texas. From then on, the family did not have domestic help in the home. Martha fared well in school, graduating from San Jacinto High School as Magna Cum Laude in 1944. Her academic acumen and academic record brought her entrance to <u>Rice Institute</u>, a school of great renown in academics. Now, its name is Rice University. After a year at Rice, her desire to branch out in life led her to the University of Texas at Austin, the school from which both of her parents had graduated in 1925 and 1925.

It was at Austin that Martha met Victor Marcus Ehlers, Jr. in the context of activities at the Westminster Student Fellowship at the <u>University Presbyterian</u> <u>Church</u>. Vic had completed military service in World War II. The young couple wanted to marry and get on with life, even before graduation, which they did. What brought me, Martha's little brother, to accepting Vic onto the scene dating her was his bright shiny Ford Coupe convertible! Boy, was it classy. Once he offered a free ride to me around the neighborhood, I thought he was a fine friend for my sister! Martha was a member of the Phi Mu Sorority Alumnae and participated in its alumni activities much of her life.

They married September 6, 1947. What is interesting is that later, one of their two daughters, Nancy Lea Ehlers Reeves, became an ordained Presbyterian minister whose first call was as an associate pastor at that <u>University</u> <u>Presbyterian Church</u> where her parents had met! Small world, isn't it?

Martha was a life-long Presbyterian, serving in later years as an ordained Elder. She participated in her church's life wherever she lived, such as in Sunday School, Presbyterian Women's organizations, etc. She was a member of the Mothers' Club of Alpha Delta Pi and Alpha Gamma Delta Sororities, and served on the Panhellenic Council. Her love for history was fulfilled somewhat in her activities as a Docent at <u>the LBJ Presidential Library in Austin</u> (named for U.S. President Lyndon Baines Johnson, a Texan native). Martha enjoyed domestic engineering, raising her two daughters, both of whom were very talented girls. Her husband died in 1985 and she lived with Nancy, her daughter, at Nancy's home in Round Rock, TX till her death January 17, 2002. A more complete narrative of Martha's life is in Chapter 36 of this autobiography.

Elizabeth, whom we called Betty Anne around the home, graduated from San Jacinto High School in Houston as Valedictorian of her class in 1945. This was a very large student body high school near downtown Houston. Elizabeth entered Rice Institute in Houston, following her sister. Having two children in the Sharpe family to gain entrance at Rice was an accomplishment and an honor for the Sharpe family, as the entrance requirements were and have always been very high. Elizabeth's musical talent included being an organist for the church where our father was Pastor.

One Sunday night when she was a freshman at Rice Institute, a Coast Guard sailor visited the service with his roommate. That Coast Guardsman spotted Elizabeth playing the organ and the other sailor spotted a young lady in the choir. They both boasted to each other that they would marry these girls! What is fun being that they both did marry them later. The story is that Andy asked to walk Elizabeth home that night after the service [lots of folks did not have cars in those days]. She laughed at the question, but willingly went with him. Unbeknownst to him, the manse (our home) was just right next door to the church, just a few feet away from where he asked her!

Andrew Albert Jumper (Andy) was a Mississippi boy, so after their marriage, each finished their college education at the University of Mississippi in Oxford. She graduated in 1950 and he in 1951. Elizabeth worked much of the time in various administrative and secretarial positions there. She was an excellent typist! They were assisted in getting their college degrees by the G.I. Bill. It was for military experienced people. Our information about the <u>Jumper family line</u> goes back to the mid 1700s,

Like her mother, Elizabeth did well serving the role of a Presbyterian Pastor's wife. Her educated experience allowed her to be a counselor and advisor to her husband in the things of ministry and of life. Elizabeth at age 44 on December 28, 1983, and Andy died May 28, 1992. A more complete narrative of Elizabeth's life is Chapter 35 in this autobiography.

During our residence in Houston, 1941 – 1951, the population of the city grew from about 385,000 to about 600,000. In 2016, its population is about 2.3 million. As mentioned earlier, we lived in the east end of Houston, near the Houston Ship Yards, more accurately described as the as the Brown Shipbuilding Yards, an industrial activity of the brown <u>Shipbuilding Company</u>. It was a major industrial area. Here is an aerial photo of it.

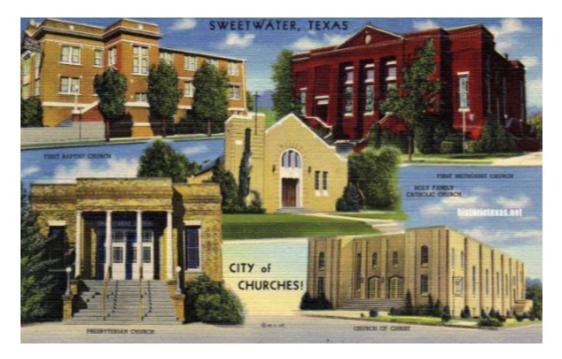


The last grammar school grade I entered in Houston was the 6th grade at Brisco Elementary School. It was in March of 1951 that our family departed from Houston for my father's new calling as Pastor of the <u>First Presbyterian Church of</u> <u>Sweetwater, Nolan County, TX</u>. My girlfriend there was Sandra Golden, but we never saw or knew of each other after my family moved to west Texas.

Chapter 4 Back Out to West Texas – Sweetwater, Texas

My father received a call in the about February of 1951 to become the Pastor of the <u>First Presbyterian Church</u> of <u>Sweetwater</u>, Texas, the county seat of <u>Nolan</u> <u>County</u>. The church was in downtown Sweetwater, a block from the town square, and across the street from the City Fire Station. Because of the difficulty and expense of air conditioning, the sanctuary was cooled only in the hottest of summer months. Otherwise, the large church windows were open during many of the services, which proved exciting and distracting when the fire engines departed on calls, and a few of the volunteer firemen seated in the congregation would jump up and run out to attend dealing with old flames!

I found a picture post card image showing churches of Sweetwater from back in that era. The <u>First Presbyterian Church</u> is the one in the lower left corner. In later years, the church relocated toward the suburbs where it is today in a modern structure.



Sweetwater was a smaller population than our previous Houston home. Notice the rattlesnake draped on the sign, a symbol of Sweetwater hosting the claimed largest annual rattlesnake roundup in the world (they a native only to North America!)





A close-up of one of the tens of thousands of rattlesnakes captured in the <u>Sweetwater</u> <u>Jaycees World's Largest</u> <u>Rattlesnake Roundup</u>, held in mid-March annually.

Our home was 601 Josephine Street, at the corner of Crane Street.



The home still has its basic shape today as when we lived there 1951-54. My bedroom was that addition off to the rear of the house, and the structure at the lot's back was the 1 car garage, with a storage & work room area behind it.

In Sweetwater, I was introduced to hunting by Mr. Johnson, a member at the First Presbyterian Church where my Dad was Pastor. We hunted mainly rabbit, but the outings were such fun. I bought my first firearm, a single-shot breach loading 20-gauge shotgun, from another man in our church, a Mr. Jennings.

The city square was the location of the Nolan County Courthouse and County Government. It was at the intersection of Broadway (Bus I-20) and Locust Streets. The first Presbyterian Church was in the second block north of the Courthouse, on Locust Street, at the intersection of 3rd



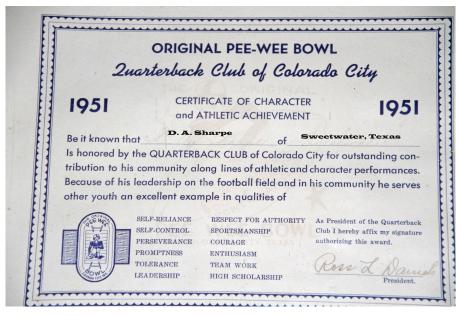
Street. The Central Fire Station was on Locust Street, across 3rd Street from the Church.



I do not know the function today of what formerly was the First Presbyterian Church, since it moved out to the edge of town. This is a 2016 photograph of what was the church and the first station across the street.



Across Locust Street from the Church was the City's Municipal Auditorium, a civil place at which many community events and activities took place. This is a 2016 photo of that old building, which possibly is no longer functioning in that role.



I played junior high football. Though I was slight of height and weight, compared to the older boy who played this same defensive end position most of the time, I did play on the winning team of the 1951 Pee Wee Bowl of Colorado City, Texas, a competition among the top four teams of west Texas. My one

star play for this short-lived football career was to block a punt in that championship game. Coach Savage was our coach.

One team player, Donald Lee Bigbee, tracked down as many of the original 1951 Pee Wee Bowl players from Sweetwater that he could locate, at least for an electronic reunion. He reached me in 2012, and we connected electronically. He and his wife, Joan, resided in Round Rock, Texas. Don died February 26, 2013, but Joan kept up with me via e-mail. Like me at the time, they were in their mid 70's, age wise.



Sweetwater High School was just about four blocks from my home. It was the home of much of the social life of Sweetwater. We were the Sweetwater Mustangs, and played football games in the sunken stadium behind the high school.

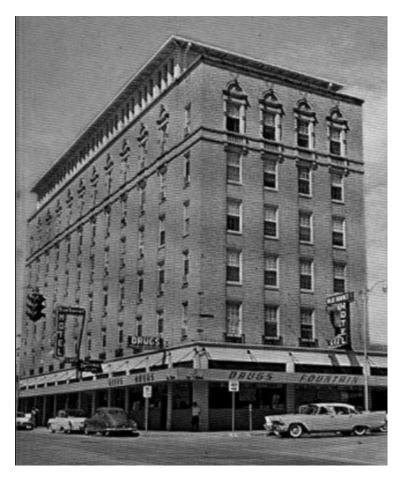


The center of cinema display was the Texas Theater downtown on the County Courthouse Square. Our family viewed most all of the Hollywood movies produced in the 1950's at that theater. I especially liked the musicals, like "Singing in the Rain."



The Nolan County Courthouse appeared this way during our rears of residency. It's been replaced now with a more modern structure.





My father, as an aspect of participating in community leadership, was a member of that International Fellowship of **Professional and Business People** known as Rotary Club, International! It's luncheon meetings each week were in the penthouse of the Blue Bonnet Hotel downtown, pictured here on the left. He would take me as a young guest occasionally, which was good occasion for me to interface with leading citizens of Sweetwater and people whose names you'd see in the newspaper, the *Sweetwater*

<u>*Reporter*</u>. Where ever we lived, there always was a newspaper subscription delivered to our home.

There was a grocery store and bakery business in Sweetwater called Sunbeam Grocery & Bakery. It



was started in the 1930's by a family named Glass, and it was owned and managed by Mr. Sam *Leland* Glass in the 1950's when our family lived there. The Glass family were members of First Presbyterian Church, so my father was their Pastor. Mr. Glass was an Elder in our Church. He had a son who was a classmate of mine.

At age 12, I wanted to acquire a part time job to begin earning money. My father took me to meet Mr. Glass at the Sunbeam Store. He interviewed, then hired me to begin as a bag boy (sacking groceries for customers) and as a stocker boy in the store, working on Friday afternoons and on Saturdays. That was 1951, and Child Labor Laws had not yet been developed. My pay was 25 cents per hour.

Work was about 12 hours per weekend, earning \$3.00. Deductions were made for Social Security and

withholding Federal Income Tax. I learned that filing a Federal Income Tax Return after the end of each year could result in a refund for the Federal Income Tax portion of the deductions. So, that was my introduction to learning to file my own Tax Return! I have done so since then for my entire life! Those early years gave me a year-end refund of something like \$10 or \$12!

Though, my working had many positive elements in the experience, what I did learn is that my life-time profession probably would not seek to be in the grocery industry!

<u>Reagan Junior High School</u> was the $7^{th} - 9^{th}$ grade school in Sweetwater. It was a long bicycle ride from our home to there, but such was the usual transportation. Occasionally a parental ride in the family automobile was provided during inclement weather, etc.

My freshman year at the <u>Sweetwater High School</u> was 1953-54. In Sweetwater, all four high school years were in the High School. The first year in high school is an ego-booster for boys at that age, so I felt important, to say the least!

A hobby interest that developed in our Sweetwater years as model railroading! A young boy about three years my senior was an avid model railroader. Robert Hudspeth, was an O gage Lionel Lines hobbyist with a large layout he'd constructed in his family's basement. His family were members of our church, and he was the delivery boy of <u>The</u> <u>Sweetwater Reporter</u>, our local newspaper! My hobby interest began



with the smaller HO gage trains, purchasing model kits to assemble the rolling stock. Here I am diligently getting into good "training!" The HO gauge modeler was a man in our church, Mr. John Ireland. He had a large model railroad layout in his home's family den.



Another hobby interest of sorts developed in my junior high days. An elderly gentleman, a member of our church, was named Mr. Jenkins. He, along with a friend of his were hunters. Mostly small game, such as cottontail rabbits,

squirrels, etc. He invited me to join them in some hunts. He introduced me to a breach-loading, 20-gage single barrel shotgun, which he enabled me to purchase for the princely sum of \$20! That was my first firearm. An occasional cotton-tail rabbit was bagged with that firearm, and my mother cooked the hunter's spoils with favors that made them attractive dining.

The <u>First Presbyterian Church</u> moved out to the edge of town shortly following our move to Dallas. My father received a call to become the Pastor of the John Knox Presbyterian Church in Dallas Texas in the spring of 1954, 2/3's of the way through my 9th grade as a Freshman in Sweetwater High School.

Being in my junior high years, no dating (socializing with girls) developed, but the one girl who attracted my attention, and whom I envisioned building up the courage to date later in high school, was a tall, blond, blue-eyed girl in my grade at school and in the youth group at our church, Linda Hubbard. Never knew of her whereabouts after we moved from Sweetwater.

The newspaper published in the Sweetwater and Noland County area was the <u>Sweetwater Reporter</u>. It was the source of all of what we sought in knowing the news. We had no TV stations out there at that time.

Chapter 5 Big D & the High School Years – Dallas, Texas

In March 1954, our family moved to Dallas for my father to accept a call to become Pastor of the John Knox Presbyterian Church. My family lived there till 1958, when I was in college.

The John Knox Presbyterian Church was established as a New Church Development by Brazos Presbytery in the early 1950s. Its initial pastor was the Rev. Mr. J. C. Foster. Unfortunately, he contracted polio, had to withdraw from the ministry, and ultimately died soon thereafter. There was an Interim Pastor, the Rev. Dr. James Gilmer McMurtry (1870-1954). He served till Dad assumed the pastoral leadership. As Dr. McMurtry relinquished the pastoral duties there, shortly thereafter, he experienced a heart attack or stroke while driving, and died in the subsequent roll-over crash. His age was 84. This was recalled for me by my friend, Judy Shoup Shannon, as Dr. McMurtry had been a friend of her parents, and had dined in their home. His death was when Judy was about age 12. She had fond memories of him as a kind and gentle man, a man with a natural Scottish brogue.

The John Knox Presbyterian Church does not exist today (2018), but rather the physical facilities are used for what is entitled the Pleasant Grove Food Pantry. I believe that for a while, it was a child-care facility. Though unincorporated, the area was known as <u>Pleasant Grove</u>. The address is <u>1655 N. Jim Miller Roa</u>d.



JOHN KNOX PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH, 1655 Jim Miller Rd., is one of ten or more churches established in the past six years with the aid of the Presbyterian U.S. Extension Committee of Dallas County.

A business friendship between Archie Johnson of Pleasant Grove and Roy Dodge of the Oak Cliff Presbyterian Church led to enlisting the interest of the Rev. T. W. Currie, Pastor, and a Sunday



Rev. Dwight A. Sharpe

g the interest of the Rev. T. W. Currie, Pastor, and a Sunday School Class of that Church. A survey was made with a view to organizing a church.

Meeting in Pleasant Grove High School, this growing group was organized into a Church by the Presbytery of Dallas on December 18, 1949.

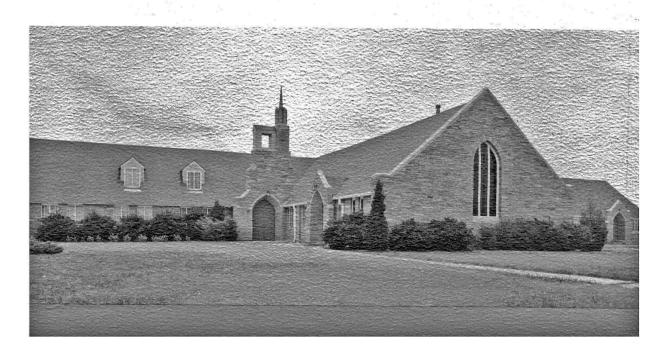
The first Pastor, the Rev. H. C. Foster, came in June 1950, and under his leadership plans for building were begun. Before the first unit was occupied on September 16, 1951, the young Pastor had been stricken with polio, and to this day (August 1956), he is confined to his rocking bed.

In January 1952, the second Pastor, the Rev. Ernest F. Deutsch, came, and under his leadership further progress was made and another wing added to the building in March 1953.

The pastorate of the Rev. Mr. Deutsch closed in August 1953, and the Church was shepherded during a six months interval by Dr. James G. McMurtry, a retired minister of Brazos Presbytery.

The present Pastor, the Rev. Dwight A. Sharpe, was installed in March 1954.

The Church, always known for its friendliness and vigor, continues a good growth, making its appeal chiefly in terms of genuineness of Christian experience.



Here's an aerial view of the church property:



This is a 2017 view of our church's land

The Chairman of the Pastoral Search Committee was one of the Church Elders, Mr. Maurice (Bill) Green. Professionally, he owned an insurance agency, and had dealings in real estate. His real estate connections brought the church into the purchase of the home (Presbyterian Pastor's church-owned homes are called a Manse) in which we lived at <u>2207 Major Drive</u>. At the time, the home was newly constructed, as of 1954. This photo below is a 2016 photo, when the neighborhood had become somewhat worn over the years, some 72 years later. The wheel chair ramp did not exist when we lived there. My bedroom was the front left (south) side of the house.



The Green family were stalwart members of John Knox Presbyterian Church. Maurice (Bill) and Louise Green had two children: a daughter in high school at the time, Marcy, and a son, Steve, who was a year younger than me, but who became fast friends with me. Shortly after

graduating from Pleasant Grove High School, Marcy married Arvie Martin, the Football player hero of the school at the time. Their wedding was a big deal at our church.

One of the degrading experiences of mine was that, in Dallas, the 9th grade was in the Junior High School level. Remember, the 9th grade had been in the Sweetwater High School. So, coming from a high school back down to a junior high was a humiliating status for me. I certainly would not let any of my former Sweetwater friends know of that demotion!

A positive event for me in entering school was that the Principal of <u>North Dallas High School</u> was a member of John Knox Presbyterian Church, a Mr. Dan Thompson. On the first day for me in my new school, he arranged to come by our home to take me to <u>Alex W. Spence Junior High School</u>. Today, it has changed functions, and is styled as a Talented/Gifted Academy. Mr. Thompson took me into the Spence Principal's Office to introduce me, so the engrafting was somewhat pleasant.

Mr. Thompson and a son, Dan, who was a year older than me (Daniel Mark Thompson). We became friends through school years, and even Dan was a student ahead of me later at Austin College in Sherman, Texas. I think he worked in hospital management, but have not located him recently. Dan's mother's name is Margaret. Dan was a member of the Hope Presbyterian Church in Austin, TX till about the year 2000. He may now reside out of state of out of this world!

My life began to upgrade, after the necessary last three months of the 9th grade at Spence. That summer enabled me to land a weekend package and stock boy job at the Wyatt Food Store in the Pleasant Grove Shopping Center on South Buckner Boulevard.

In the summer of 1954, I attended the Dallas Presbytery High School Summer Camp up on Lake Dallas. I met a girl, Miss June Wilson, to whom I was attracted soon! This was developing to be the first girlfriend type of relationship I'd experienced.

She was a new student in <u>South Oak Cliff High School</u>. It was in the far south central part of Dallas. I was a new student at <u>Woodrow Wilson High School</u>, in the Lakewood area of north east

Dallas, and our home was near Pleasant Grove, in the far southeast end of Dallas. Without having driver's licenses, nor automobiles (our families were one car families in those days, with only the father regularly using the cars, mostly taking them to work), we didn't pursue our new-found friendship much, outside of phone calls. The State Fair Day rolled around! That was the School District's city-wide holiday to allow students to attend the <u>Texas State Fair</u> on designated day in October. This became the occasion for the first date-ever for me to have with a young lady!

The logistics for this event became a significant effort! First, I boarded a bus in Pleasant Grove, in-bound to the end of the streetcar rail line in southeast Dallas. The streetcar was ridden to downtown Dallas, where a transfer was made to another street car. The second street car route ended about half way to June's home in south Oak Cliff, so another bus was boarded. After coming to her home, we walked to the bus stop and



returned to downtown Dallas, then out the street car line to the State Fair Grounds. We spent the whole day there. In the late afternoon, we began the same entire reverse trip. It was a total of 14 times I boarded a bus or streetcar that day!

Though it was a fun experience going on that first date, our distances living apart did not allow much to develop. Unfortunately, she developed a cancer and died before graduating from high school.

Woodrow Wilson High School was a good experience for me, for the 10th, 11th and 12th grades. In the 10th and 11th grade years, I served in the Army ROTC Corps. That high school, we were told, was unique, in that it was the only public high school in the United States that had required Army ROTC for all male students who did not have some medical or other reason to be exempted. No one there had ever heard of a conscientious objector, so that status was not an element! For my senior year, that military requirement was discontinued, so I waved the thirdyear service. The major motivation to waive the service was that to be an officer, you needed to be in your senior year and you needed to have attended at least one of the ROTC Summer Camps at near-by Lake Dallas. I had not attended those camps, because I held down full time jobs at the Wyatt Food Stores in the summers! I did not want to be in the senior year where most of my peers were officers and I was not! Mr. G. L. "Pop" Ashburn was the high school principal my sophomore and junior years. He'd been the only principal since its beginning in 1928. His 1956 Retirement coincided with the merger of the Pleasant Grove Independent School District (where our church and many of our friends were) into the Dallas Independent School District. The popular Superintendent of the PGISD was Mr. Dale Brown was made WWW Principal my senior year.



One of the course choices offered us was to take Spanish or Latin foreign language. My immediate attraction was to take Spanish, because there were many Spanish speaking people in Dallas and in Texas! However, with my mother's double major in college being in Latin and Greek, she insisted that my choice be the Latin offering! My enthusiasm for taking Latin was sufficiently low that my grades were not the best! Later, I would learn that taking the Latin did have

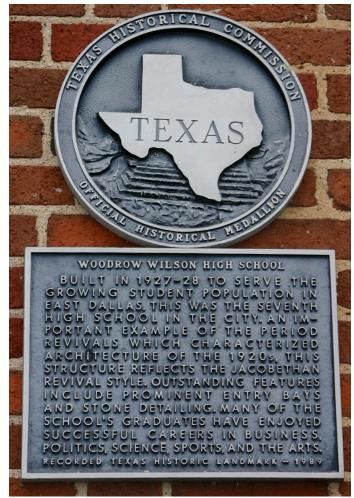
a worthy benefit for me. After becoming a college student, introduction to some of the bigger words in college enabled the Latin experience to give me a good idea about the meaning of those new big words!

One friend at Woodrow was Thomas (Tommy) Flanagan, who turned out to be my dormitory roommate at Austin College for three semesters of 1958 and 1959.

Another course selection in high school affected my later life in a special way. We had typing classes there, but virtually all the students usually were female! That was because in the culture of that day, typing was only needed by secretaries, who always were female! However, my perception was that knowing how to type would be a good skill to have. I became one of only two male students in a class of 30 students taking typing! These all were manual typewriters, as electric typewriters were unusual to see. In retrospect, that course provided the most usefulness to me the rest of my life of any other course in high school! Little did I know at the time, but my first professional employment after graduating from college was to be a salesman for IBM electric typewriters!

A benefit of typing in high school was that the English teacher had a term paper requirement for Senior graduation. Extra credit was given for a typewritten report. In those days, probably 75% of the submitted senior papers were hand-written. Additional extra credit was given for an error-free typewritten paper. That meant no erasures could be seen on a page.





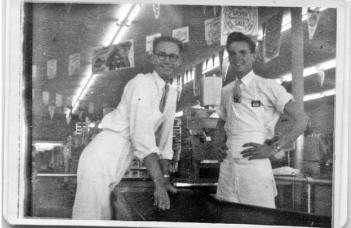
That meant that each time an error was made, the whole page needed to be retyped! To achieve the 15 pages for my report, it may have been 50 or more actual pages that were typed to get 15 error-free pages! With my grades being what they were, I needed all the extra credit that I could earn!

After having my first brief girlfriend experience, my attentions turned to a young lady some 3 years younger, named Judy. Her full name is Jewell Linn Shoup. Her parents were Lin and Wilma Shoup, active people in our church. Her father taught our youth Sunday School class. She became the most frequent date during my high school years. She was a student at W. W. Samuel High School. At first, her boyfriend was Dick White. I had to compete with him for her attraction. The two of them were in a dance club together, and were a dashing couple! Judy was my date to the Senior Prom for Woodrow Wilson High School, held at the newly opened and fancy Statler-Hilton Hotel in downtown Dallas. We had many social and romantic adventures throughout those years. Dating couples had a sport to conclude social event evenings called watching the submarine races at White Rock Lake! It was that pretty lake in East Dallas with plenty of parking places around the shores.

After my high school graduation, our paths seemed to go in different directions. Interestingly, I am Facebook friends today both with Judy (*Judy Shoup Shannon*) and with her daughter, Kelly (*Kelly Shannon Stranahan*). Judy's parents retired from Dallas and relocated elsewhere in Texas, but they and my parents kept contact with each other into their mutual retirement days.

I became friends with Dick White, as he also was a friend of Steve Green. With my part time job at Wyatt Food Stores, my recommendations managed to secure work for the two of them. In that context, we became fast friends. In this photo, Steve Green is on the left, Dick White in the middle and I am on the right. Wyatt Food Stores built a new store in the center area of that Shopping Center, which opened in the fall of 1955. My advancement had been to be a checker (operator of the cash register at the check-out stands!) When the new store opened, I took off from school that Monday, and was the checker to transact the very first purchase in the store! What an honor!





Steve Green & DA Sharpe Wyatt Foord Store on Buckner in Dallas • c1957

The store manager who hired me was Mr. William (Bill) Inge. He was there the entire time of my part-time employment over those years. I learned a lot from him. He managed that store like an in-charge king! Whatever he said was the last word! I was fortunate to work under him and to learn from him.



Harry Sharpe

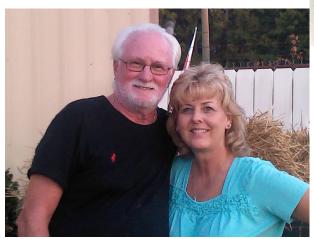
In 1955, my cousin from Georgetown, TX, Harry Franklin Sharpe, married his high school girl friend, Barbara Jean Morris. They were young ages 18 and 19. They came to Dallas seeking to find work for Harry. My introduction of Harry to Mr. Inge resulted in Wyatt's Food Stores hiring him to work in the store's pharmacy department. The young couple bore a child soon. They didn't stay in Dallas long. Perhaps it was two or three years. Then returned to Georgetown. Eventually they had four children, and the marriage ended in divorce in the 1960s. This is a photo from his Georgetown High School annual.



There was another family at our church whose son was Mr. Stephen (Steve) Lester Humphrey. Steve's father was Victor (Vic) Humphrey. Steve dated Suzanne Black, both being students at W. W. Samuels High School. As a matter of fact, even I had a couple of dates with Suzanne, but Steve was the winner here, at least for the high school years. I needed to wait for another (and better) Suzanne for my life!

In the W. W. Samuel's High School annual in their senior year, Steve was pictured as being voted Class Favorite!

Steven (Steve) Green dated a girl named Charlotte Dial. She lived directly across the street from our home on Major Drive. She was Steve's first marriage.





Steve graduated from <u>Tulane Medical School</u> in <u>New Orleans</u>. He was a student there while my first post-college work was with IBM in the 1960s. That gave Steve the opportunity to meet Suzanne. He subsequently spent 27 years on the faculty at <u>East Carolina University Brody</u> <u>School of Medicine</u>. His second marriage was to Fran in 1998. This is a later photo of Steve and Fran.



Dick White and I went to the University of Texas together. His full name is Richard Hall White. He graduated from the University of Texas Medical School. His practice was in Austin, TX, Adolescent, Adult and Geriatric Medicine, Minor Emergencies, FAA



Examinations. Dick's wife, Patricia, is pictured here on the left in a 2009 photo.



One of Judy Shoup's best friends in high school days was Jackie Pope, a girl with whom I also became acquainted, through that friendship. Here, Jackie is pictured with Ron Headrick. They were an honored couple in the Valentine's Day Court, and was the boy Jackie dated in high school.

Interestingly, after college for Jackie and for Steve Humphrey, both of whom knew each other in high school, began dating. They married and give issue to several children. Together, they built an electrical contractor's company, <u>Humphrey & Associates</u>. Some 50 years later, there was an occasion for them to be our contractors for a project at our

retirement home in Aurora, Texas! They resided in Fort Worth, and for a time were members of the Baptist church where the Classical Conversations Home Schooling organization held its weekly formal classroom instructions. This is the group in which our Westmoreland children were schooled, and our daughter, Tiffany, taught.

Ann Pickerel was another young lady among the teens at Samuels High School and at John Knox Presbyterian Church. Her parents were active leaders in the congregation. I had a few dates with Ann as well. She married a guy named John White (no relation to Dick White). Ann and John came to the reunions cited below in 2007 and in 2009.



There was a fun activity which Steve Green

and I pursued. John Knox Presbyterian Church had Sunday evening services, which included a section of song requests from the congregation. For reasons, I do not fully recall, Steve and I became the leaders at the front of the sanctuary who called upon the people to request a favorite hymn, then the two of us led them in the singing, while the pianist, Mrs. Mathis, provided the music. Her daughter was Margaret Ann Mathis, but I've lost track of her. Bill Mathis, her father, had divorced Ruth. Later, Ruth married a widower, Mr. Sanders in the church. His children were Larry and Virginia.

We friends having Pleasant Grove memories have had two reunions in "recent years." They were in Granbury, TX March 17-18, 2007 and at some date in 2009 I've missed recording.

Here are some photos from the Granbury 2007 gathering:

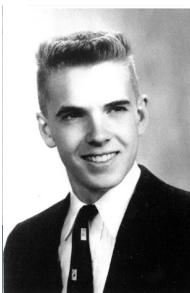


There was a 2009 reunion of some of us from Pleasant Grove in Dallas. It was at the home of Dick & Patricia White in Austin, TX.



L to R: John & Ann (Pickrell) White, Dick White (no relation to John), D. A. Sharpe, Judy Shoup Shannon, Jackie & Steve Humphrey, and Suzanne Shape. Ann, Judy, Steve and me all were from our John Knox Presbyterian Church.

Here is a photo use for me in my high school annual, depicting me as a



DA Senior Yearbook Picture < 1957

member of the Library Council. It's a photo that had been long lost for me. However, it came back to me through a thought gift of Judy Shoup Shannon to our daughter, Tiffany, much later in

life when my family lived in Dallas (1982-2004). We'll cover that fun experience in the Chapter, "Coming Home to Texas."

My senior year included a good number of social occasions and celebrations for the



coming of age that we seniors were approaching. Judy Shoup was my escort for most of the events and dances. The Senior Prom for my <u>Woodrow Wilson</u> <u>High School</u> was in downtown Dallas at what then was the new <u>Statler-Hilton</u> <u>hotel</u>. It was the newest and fanciest at the time, but today is a residential facility.

Here is a photo of Judy and me at one of her birthday celebrations. Judy's younger brother, David Shoup, is on



the right, next to Wilma Shoup, Judy's Mom. Judy's



birthday was Christmas Day, 1941. Here's a photo of Wilma in her young years.

Another family who were members at John Knox Presbyterian Church with us was our family physician, Dr. James Sewell. His wife's name was Ruth, and they had several children. Dr. Sewell treated me for asthma about 1955 a couple of times. That being on the record was what caused me to be turned down in joining the U.S. Navy, and the Draft Board classified me as 4F. That meant I would not have military service. After we moved away from Dallas, we heard that Jim and Ruth divorced and Jim married the nurse who worked at his office.

Larry and Virginia Sanders were a brother and sister teenage friends of mine at John Knox Presbyterian Church as well. Their mother died, and their widowed father married Ruth Mathis, the church organist. Ruth's heritage at that church is that her Mother, Elsie McBee, was sort of a matriarch there. She also was its organist. The original organizing pastor of that church was a minister, whose name I've forgotten, but who died from Polio. My father followed him as Pastor. Here was one of our infrequent winter days. It was taken in Dallas, in 1954. It was at this same spot that I was forced to learn how to change a flat tire on an automobile, this automobile, in fact! One of my duties after becoming licensed to drive was to drive my Father to church early on Sunday mornings for his necessary preparations. I returned home and later, Mom and I would drive to church.

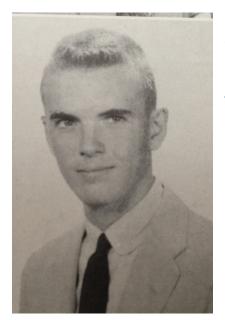


One Sunday morning, it was raining heavily. Just as we were about to depart for taking Dad to church, we discovered that a tire was flat! There was not time for Dad to change into work clothes and back again into his Sunday suit. So, he instructed me to get the spare tire out of the trunk, get the tire tool and figure out how to take off the lugs, change the tire and reassembly it! Not only was this form of self-teaching difficult, doing it in the pouring down rain was simply unimaginable! Finally, the tire was changed, and I drove him to church in my soaking wet clothing! This is not the best way to learn about taking care of cars! My first taste of retirement!

Our Senior Class baccalaureate service was at the <u>First Baptist Church</u>, where the then famous <u>W. A. Chriswell</u> was the senior pastor for around 50 years, some of which that church was the largest membership church in America. Our Commencement Graduation Ceremony was at the <u>State Fair of</u> <u>Texas</u> Auditorium. We were a graduating class of 527, as I recall, which was the largest class ever to graduate from a Dallas High School up to that time. Unfortunately, I was not the valedictorian of my class, nor ever the salutatorian. I landed a spot in the third quarter of my class! Hopefully the later parts of my life can be considered more successful! We did have one student of somewhat renown. It had taken something like four or four and a half years for him to pass successfully the required three years of high school. When he walked across the stage, with clasped, raised hands above his head, he received what may have been the biggest ovation of clapping from the audience of anyone that day! Good for Paul! I don't know what ever became of him, but I imagine he finally was successful!

Later chapters in this autobiography will mention how some of these friends had paths that crossed mine again in other circumstances. It is pleasing, still, to have warm and friendly connections with each other, even after these years, and while there have been long periods of absence from one another. Praise be to God!

Chapter 6 College Days at Austin College, Sherman, Texas



My senior year in high school included the search to determine where my college education would be. My Presbyterian Father wanted me to attend <u>Austin</u> <u>College</u>, a <u>Sherman, TX</u> college associated with our church. It was small student body, something like 700. The drawback for us was its private school status, which meant high tuition, compared to public state colleges.

My academic achievements had not been quite adequate to earn a college scholarship based on academic merit, and our family income was not quite low enough to qualify for tuition assistance.

So, we had to pay the full rate of tuition and dormitory living.

Founded in 1849 by Princeton-educated Presbyterian missionary Dr. Daniel Baker, Austin College enjoys a place in early Texas history, and remains a recognized leader in higher education for innovative programs, a strong faculty, and dedicated students. Austin College was



granted a charter signed by Texas Governor George Wood in November of 1849.

Modeled after those of Harvard, Yale, and Princeton, that charter remains in use today, making Austin College the oldest institution of higher education in

Texas operating under its original name and charter, as recognized by the State Historical Survey Committee. <u>Southwestern University</u> in Georgetown, Texas, founded in 1840 by the Methodist Church, claims to be the oldest Texas institution of education. However, it does not have an unbroken charter name. The name has changed along the way, so Austin College jumped in our claiming continuous educational antiquity!

What's interesting is that my parents, and many of my Sharpe relatives are interred at the IOOF Cemetery in Georgetown, adjacent to the Southwestern University campus. Georgetown had been the home of my Sharpe family as early as 1882 from Ravenna, Ohio.

There is a sidelight trivia about Austin College being patterned after Harvard College, among a few others. Harvard's first Treasurer was Mr. <u>Herbert</u> <u>Pelham</u> (1602-1673). Herbert was my 25th cousin, eight times removed! This is on my Mother's side of the family. Herbert Pelham is the father-in-law of Freelove Arnold, wife to Edward, Herbert's son through his second marriage, which was to Elizabeth Bosvile. Freelove is the great grandaunt of <u>General Benedict Arnold</u> of American Revolutionary soldier fame and of his great traitor role played against the Patriots. Expressed another way, Herbert Pelham is the 2nd great grandnephew of the wife of the 3rd cousin, five times removed of the husband of the stepdaughter of my 6th great granduncle!

The experience there was good for me. Making a broadening set of friends was enlightening. My first semester was lodging in an old dormitory that was slated for discontinuance after that semester. A new dorm was being competed, named Baker Hall, after the school's founding personality, <u>Dr.</u> <u>Daniel Baker.</u>

My roommate was a boy <u>from Idabel, Oklahoma</u>, named <u>John Allen Derryberry</u>. He was a very smart student, destined to become a dentist, a career that he fulfilled later back in his own hometown. One unique experience stands out in my mind about John.



One evening as he was exiting the school library, a bat swooped down and pecked him on top of his head, drawing blood! After his having immediate medical attention, we learned of a serious decision he had to make. Rabies can be contracted from a bat bite. The problem in 1957 was that the shots available for bat bites was dangerous! In 50% of the cases administrated, the serum killed the patient! However, if you waived having the shots, and if the bat did have rabies, there was a 100% chance the patient would die! He had to decide! Ultimately, he decided not to take the shots. It was good decision, as God's providence did spare his life. John left Austin College after that first Freshman semester to get married soon to his high school sweetheart. I don't know where his education was completed.

Another interesting thing to me about John Derryberry is that a friend of his during their high school days at Idabel was Herbert Westmoreland. It was over 40 years after that when Herb Westmoreland's son, Steve, married our daughter, Tiffany! Herb and I have had fun sharing recollections about John Derryberry. Unfortunately, John has a disease early in life, and died when he was in his 50's.

Austin College did not have national fraternities and sororities, but it did have local ones. That meant they were not affiliated with other social organizations outside of that campus. One which attracted my attention was the Drake Fraternity. It seemed that most the boys who'd become my friends were pledging to the Drakes, so I, too, jointed, having been honored with an invitation to do so.

Since its founding in 1946, Drake members have always highly valued the many things that make them different from others. They have a fancy name for that diversity. Because of this, new members to the Drake Fraternity were not expected to fit some predetermined image or pursue the same activities as Actives. New members were not under pressure to give up anything



— whether their defining personal views or existing loyal friends — to become a member. But they must wholeheartedly dedicate themselves always to the high ideals to which they strove as Drakes Their colors are Kelly Green and Gold. Their mission statement is "The DRAKE Fraternity promotes social brotherhood, academic excellence, athletic achievement, and the pursuit of gentlemanly ideals."

Though the various fraternities and sororities had their own social events through the year, each one sponsored a major dance open to any students to attend. Ours had a sea shore theme to it. It was called the Ship Wreck Dance! This photo is of our Drakes at their Ship Wreck Dance in 1958.



For the second semester of my Freshman year, the men students could move into a newly opened Baker Dormitory, named after Austin College founder <u>Dr. Daniel Baker</u>. My roommate was William Thomas (Tom) Flanagan. He had been in my Dallas Woodrow Wilson High School

graduating class of 1957.



There was a freshman young lady named Antonette Michulka, from Houston for whom Tom developed early designs for a social relationship. A complication with that is that her high school boy friend also was a freshman with us. His name was John Malcolm Purcell. He was the son of a Presbyterian minister, the Rev. Malcolm Purcell, who was a friend of my Presbyterian father!

As it turned out, Tom won the affections of Antonette, and they dated all our freshman and sophomore years. Tom and I would enjoy socializing together, and Antonette had a high school friend, from Lamar High School, Houston, Texas, who was Kay Jack. I believe the both also were members of First Presbyterian Church there. Kay became the usual date with me, as the two of us enjoyed social life with Tom and Antonette.



After my transferring to the University of Texas for my junior year, I lost track of Tom, Antonette and Kay. However, at some point, Tom and Antonette went in different directions, and Tom began to date Kay



Ultimately, Tom and Kay married, and I believe gave issue to two sons. Tom suffered a terminal illness in his mid-thirties. Kay married a man named George Bones. George died in 2011. I've had some communication with Kay in later life. She served a time on the staff of First Presbyterian Church in Houston. Her Facebook name is Kay Jack Bones. Early in 2017, Kay told me about her new marriage to Mr. Allan (Al) DuPont, a widower whose family at FPC had been friends for years with Kay's family.



James William (Jim) Walls was a guy I met in 1957 who was a sophomore. He was to play a part later in life after my graduation from college and his assisting in meeting Suzanne Boggess, who was to become my wife! During Austin College days, Jim dated Sue Schoeneck, a freshman class student from Dallas whose prominent family were members of Preston Hollow Presbyterian Church there. Sue was elected to



be the Secretary-Treasurer of her Sophomore Class in 1958-59.



In my sophomore year, 1958, Sue's younger twin sisters, Anne and Carol Schoeneck entered Austin College as freshmen.

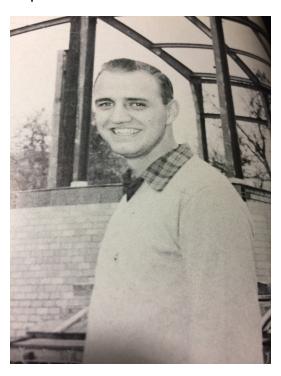
Later in life, during 1962, Anne and Carol would have a role of humor associated with the very unusual first date that I had with Suzanne Boggess, my wife to be! That story is in Chapter 10.



Another pair of students at Austin College who would have relationship with me later in life was

Anna Doggett, the daughter of a Presbyterian Pastor, and Lindy Mack Cannon. Anna was a freshman with me, and Lindy Cannon, a senior student, chosen as the Male Class Favorite his Senior year! Lindy was

destined to become Dr. Lindy M. Cannon, a Presbyterian Pastor. Suzanne and I would enter their married lives and friendship as



residents of St. Louis County, Missouri, when we were there 1972-1982, and years later when they resided in Montreat, North Carolina.

Tom Guin was President of the Austin College Student Assembly in 1958-59. Not only was he a fellow Drake Fraternity member with me, his family were members of First Presbyterian Church in Ballinger, Texas in the 1930s. In documenting about when I was baptized as an infant, I learned that he was baptized by my father the year before my baptism!

Here is a photo of Tom presiding over the ACSA and a photo of that group of elected student leaders:



I was reminded in reviewing the copies of the "Chromascope," the name given for Austin College school annuals, that there were student groups organized around political parties. Here are the Democrats (on the left, of course), and the Republicans!





FIRST ROW: Bert Bronaugh; Mary Moore; Tom Sauer; Randy Pierce; John Purcell, Secretary-Trea urer; Jerry Reitz. Not Pictured: Louis Manz, Vice-President; Lawrence Anderson, President.



One of my fond memories were during my sophomore year (1958-59). My roommate was Tom Flanagan in Baker Hall Dormitory. Our next-door neighbors were Freshmen Tom Brown, from Camden, Arkansas, and Ronnie Stevenson from Fort Smith, Arkansas. Paths have crossed with me and Tom. Tom Finley Brown graduated from Austin College, then Austin Presbyterian Theology Seminary in Austin, TX. He became an ordained pastor in the Presbyterian Church. I don't know where all he served, but he retired as a Pastor member of the Grace Presbytery here in North Texas, an area generally encompassing the Dallas/Fort Worth area. I understand he and his wife, Carolyn, reside in Bedford, Texas. That's only about 35 miles from where we now live, so maybe our paths can cross again.

https://www.facebook.com/tfinbrown

Here's a photo of Ronnie Stevenson from the Austin College year book. I don't know what paths Ronnie followed later in life, so don't have any current information about him.



Some of the faculty members returned to my fond memories, as cited below.

Dr. Clyde L. Hall taught my Economics class. In early 2017, the Dow Jones Industrial stock market averages surpassed the 20,000 points mark, I am reminded how closely Dr. Hall had us follow the movements of the DJ Industrial Averages in 1958-59. The index was increasing, and the speculation was whether the DJIA would reach the magic number of 600 that year! WOW! See what inflation has done over almost 60 years! That is a 33 times multiplier.



The average price of a Chevrolet sedan in 1959 was \$1,800. Today, a similar Chevrolet is \$28,500. That's only a 16 times multiplier! So, the nation's stock market values certainly have prospered greatly!



Dean Rollin M. Rolfe was the legendary teacher of math at Austin College. He taught the five-hour advanced math class intended for students headed for engineering or technical fields. You should recall that most classes were three hour classes (meeting Monday, Wednesday and Friday for an hour each time). In our math class, we assembled five times a week!

Dr. Walter W. Steffey taught my Physics class. This again was for technically bound majors. In my early years at college, my vision for education was to become an engineer. My career did finally focus on a lot of technology, but my direction developed in the direction of administration, rather than engineering.





Dr. James B. Storey was the Professor of Religion. I confess that in those early collegiate days of my life, religion did not manifest itself the way it surely should have. However, there were some things Dr. Storey taught us, and I am grateful for the spiritual development that came later in my life, partly influenced by the prodding of people like Dr. Storey.

Chapter 7 College Days Employment

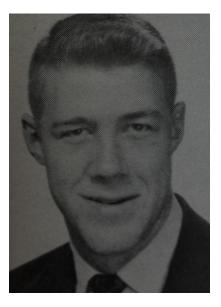
There was a need for me to earn some funds in part-timework on campus while at Austin College. This was done in the cafeteria and on telephone answering duty in the Baker Dormitory. These jobs paid 60 cents per hour.

Working in the kitchen at the Austin College Cafeteria in the serving line, as well as in the clean-up crew, after students had shown how messy they could leave the tables after dining, was a humbling experience. It also gave me a realization about how I should be cognizant about conducting my life's habits in manners that did not disgust people after my leaving a place.

International Business Machines, Inc. (IBM) announced plans for a new manufacturing plant in Sherman, Texas in August 1956. Ground was broken and construction begun in May 1957. Production operations began in the partially completed plant on December 23, 1957. The company dedicated its 61,500-square foot manufacturing plant on October 23, 1958. It was located on a 238-acre plot near U.S. 75 at the southern edge of the city, and it produced punched cards for IBM's data processing machine users in the Southwest region of the United States. My employment began in September in temporary office quarters in Sherman.

The only product made at this plant was what was called IBM Punch Cards. Those of the thin cards measuring 7 3/8 in \times 3 1/4 in, that were put through key punch machines to record data by punching diagonal holes in the cards. Those holes translated into numbers and letters read by the early stages of computers. Computers in that day, for the most part, occupied whole rooms, just for the computer. The first computer on which I learned to work was the IBM RAMAC. It was the first commercial computer making use of a moving-head hard disk drive (magnetic disk storage) for secondary storage. It had only been announced in September 1956. This gave me an early entrance into the world of high tech that was to be a part of my subsequent life.

That part-time job developed into a full-time work during the summer of 1958. Since the college dorm was not opened in the summer, I rented a small furnished apartment in town, shared with another of the student IBM workers, Mr. Jeff Kelly, who also was a Drake Fraternity Brother of mine at Austin College. My father helped me purchase a 1953 Buick automobile for \$375.00, to commute to work and to home. It was sold a year later for \$300.00. Not a bad transportation ownership cost for a year!





This is a look-alike image I found of the 1953 Buick Special I had then.

Little did I realize that later, after college graduation, I would be employed again by IBM 1962-69.

As college academics became more challenging to me, the decision was made to discontinue the 20 hours per week work at IBM toward the end of the Spring semester in 1959, and go back to focusing more on studies. Some dormitory telephone answering work was done, as well as bus-boy work in the school cafeteria. Back to the \$.60/hour rates!

Phone communication was not nearly as pervasive as it is later in our hightech society. A call would come to the main switchboard at the dorm, which had something like four phone lines to serve the entire resident population of about 75 men students. When a caller wanted a boy in room 312, I would push a doorbell-like button that signaled a buzz in that room. One buzz for the boy whose bed was closest to the door and two buzzes for the boy closest to the window. Then, the called boy would go out into the hall to a centrally located single phone on that floor, pick it up and talk to the caller! If a boy wanted to make a call outside, he'd go to the hall phone and dial nine for an outside line, if nobody else was using one of the four phones lines the dorm had. Each line could be used either for an incoming our outgoing call.

That summer of 1959, I went home to my parents, which was then a different home. After I'd gone to college, my father took a call to be Pastor of the Highland Park Presbyterian Church, located in southeast San Antonio, TX. They moved from Dallas in 1958. That church does not exist today.

Searching for summer employment in 1959 landed me a job at a local grocery store chain known as Model Markets. This store where I worked was in northeast Antonio, on North New Braunfels Avenue. Getting back and forth for work involved a public transportation bus ride of some seven miles



for me each day. I did some grocery shelf stocking, but mainly I did what was enjoyable, that of being a cash register checker. Such work gave me the opportunity to develop the skill of making friends with customers, especially those who were regular customers.

One regular shopper who was friendly with me was Mrs. Berry. Her husband was called Granville, but I think it may have been a nick name. She invited me to their home on my day off from work to enjoy lunch and a swim in their pool, meeting their college-age son, Tony, and their high school-age daughter, Linda. As it turned out, Linda became my dating escort for the summer. Later when she went to <u>Southern Methodist University</u> in Dallas, I visited her a few times. I tried in later years to re-connect with Linda or Tony, but were unsuccessful in locating any of their family.

The next two summers, 1960 and 1961, were spent employed at Camp Longhorn, a boys camp adjacent to a girls camp on Inks Lake, near Burnet, Texas. It is an athletic camp doing a variety of sports, but major on swimming and water sports. The founder and owner of the camp was Tex Robertson, and his lovely wife, Pat. Tex Robertson (Julian Robertson) was an Olympic bronze medalist for the 1932 US Water Polo team and

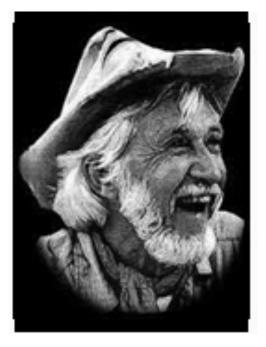


former swimming coach for the University of Texas. He is best known for inventing the flip turn. Tex is also recognized as a founder of Camp Longhorn in Burnet, TX and for the creation of a flying disk game, which was like the Frisbee. Its location was on Inks Lake, a lake created as one of many in Texas along the Colorado River.

It was a place where the kids received the utmost in encouragements to excel and be the best they could, not only in athletic endeavors, but in how people are recognized and treated as special in all regards. As can be noted in the lower left corner of the collage of images above, Camp Long Horn is a place where "Everybody is somebody."

Some of Tex Robertson's UT students coached were accomplished winners of international swimming contests: Bill Johnson and Bob Tarlton were a couple of them. They ultimately become partners in the Camp Long experience that Tex initiated.

The course I taught more than any others was jumping on the trampoline. One of my summers was when George W. Bush was a camper, destined to be the 43rd President of the United States. I guess I taught George to jump! <u>President George W. Bush</u> is a tenth cousin, eight times removed to the first President of the United States, George Washington, who is my 26th cousin, seven times removed. President Bush is a distant cousin of a distant cousin of mine!



The summer of 1959 was when I was a cabin counselor for the Navajos, which is the first-grade boys. A friend and contemporary of Tex Robertson was an old Texas historic figure, <u>Hondo Crouch</u>. Hondo was the head counselor in our Navajo's Cabin, mentoring two of us younger cabin counselors. He was the "*Clown Prince of Luckenbach*," and entertainer of star quality who refused for years to make money from his comic gifts. He as rancher. A philosopher. A poet. A music man and inspiration for the hit song "*Let's go to Luckenbach, Texas.*" Hondo Crouch was a Texas folk hero. When President Lyndon Johnson was in office, one

of the national magazines published a lengthy article on various Texas characters who were identified as down home friends from the world of the President. In the article was a full-page photograph of Hondo Crouch in his cowboy rancher dudes and boots, leaning against an aging barn door with a country straw in his mouth, protruding out from under his ten-gallon hat! It was marvelous!

Transferring to the University of Texas in Austin in the fall of 1960, my lodging was in the second floor of the two-story large home of Mrs. Victor Marcus Ehlers, Sr. (Edith) at 2626 Rio Grande Street. Mrs. E. (as we called her) was a widow and the mother of my brother-in-law, Victor Marcus Ehlers, Jr. Vic had married my sister, Martha de Noailles Sharpe. Mrs. E. had four bedrooms upstairs and a bathroom. She rented out three of the rooms to University students for \$25/month each My last couple of years at the University of Texas school years included only one part time job. Such was washing dishes at a widow woman's boarding house. Mrs. Hudson! She had three tables of 12 seats each. We had to set & serve these 36 places every 30 minutes from 11:30 AM to 1:00 PM for the last serving. In the evenings, it was 5:00 to 6:30 PM. In the meantime, all the dirty dishes had to be brought into the kitchen for me to wash so they could be set out again.

She did not have enough dishes to have two sets. All the dishes were washed by hand in the sink. There was no such thing present as any dishwashing machine. Served were eight meals a day for Mondays through Fridays. Forty meals a week with 36 boys served almost each time! I wished dishes for twenty of the meals, in exchange for having all my forty meals each week free at the boarding house! Someone else washed the other twenty meals.

Chapter 8 College Days at the University of Texas, Austin, Texas

The high cost of tuition at Austin College drove our decision for me to transfer to the <u>University of Texas</u> down at Austin, Texas for the fall semester of 1959. Entering as a junior, the usual plan was to graduate in two years.

Having not done as well as would have been expected at Austin College, it was immediately known that I would need to go for two years and at least an additional semester!

With being limited with funds, with no transportation (I walked everywhere To school To town, etc.), there was no social (dating) life evolved ever at the Austin campus. It was somewhat of a non-event series of three years, with my graduating with a BBA degree from the School of Business, majoring in Personnel Management and Industrial Relations (Labor Union Relations).

The selection of a major embracing Personnel Management was



influenced partly by the experiences I'd had in the many part time employments throughout my teenage and college years. It was evident to me that wisdom and knowledge were necessary ingredients to lead groups of people into successful accomplishments of the purposes for which they were employed. It also was an endeavor in which my expectation was developed in learning how to lead people with positive directions, encouragements and expectations, and knowing how to reward for those people for their successful achievements.

Student life at the University of Texas for me was somewhat uneventful. Being on such a narrow budget, my social life was about nil. I do not recall ever having a social date with a young woman in the student body, nor anyone from outside. My interface with friends centered in my work as a dish washer at the boarding house where that work provided for my meals. These were the days when I had no transportation. I walked everywhere. I even walked the dozen plus blocks to go to a movie theater downtown.



The Tower, completed in □ 1937, stands 307 ft (94 m) tall and dons different colors of lighting on special occasions. As I've commented sometimes, a primary function of college education is to learn to learn. After all, much of the technology I used later in my professional life was not even invented during my college years. The Personnel Management major was selected, because I thought working with people/employees would be interesting. A companion aspect with that major was the Industrial Relations aspect, which is working with Labor Unions, etc.

The fact is that my employment did not have any personnel supervisory roles, outside of occasionally having a secretary to direct, until I was in my mid-forties, age-wise. In my entire career, there never was interface with any Labor Union or labor union members.

Blockage in my college career seemed to harass me with unexpected delays. For example, the required report writing course being taken in what was supposedly my last semester, had a requirement announced one day in December that the semester report was due prior to Christmas vacation holiday. I was absent that day, due to having to take a Draft Board physical exam. Somehow, I never understood that requirement.

The tower, the main building overseeing the campus, had orange lights turn on the top portion of the building when UT won a sports game. The whole building was lit with orange when we won a league championship! Another thing many people don't notice is that building has scripture sculptured upon it. John 8:32 is cited, *"Ye shall know the truth and the truth shall set you free."*

While I lived at my brother-in-law's mother's home at 2616 Rio Grande Street, I washed dishes at Mrs. Hudson's boarding house a block away. I talk about that in Chapter 7. Across the street from Mrs. Hudson's was where a couple of my very best friends rented rooms, Richard (Dick) Hall White and Wilbert (Willie)

Mynar. I only met Willie at the University of Texas setting. He was from an east Texas community and from recent ancestors who emigrated to America from the Czech Republic. Dick and I were competitors in dating the same young lady during our high school days in Dallas.

My senior year, 1961-1962 was when Dick, Willie and I decided to share a rented apartment, so we could provide our own cooking and living. We rented an apartment to the rear of a lady's home on Red River Street, at the corner of Duncan Lane. We slept on bunk beds, and, to say the least, it was a modest apartment in size and appearance of furniture. But, we felt like it was kinda like "home."

We basically created dinners for us to share together, and any other food consumption was on our own. We took turns cooking the dinner. We did grocery store shopping together, as we were sharing the costs. It seemed that Willie and I did more of the shopping than did Dick, who was a high class medical school aspirant. Willie was an Aerospace Engineer major, and I was a Business Administration degree major, of low esteem in their eyes.

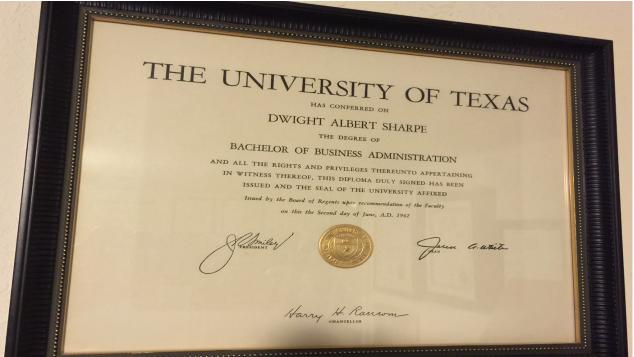
I remember one thing upon which Willie and I agreed about after graduating and having real jobs. The one thing was that we would shop at grocery stores and not even bother with looking at the prices. We would be able to pay for whatever in the store we saw and wanted! And, I believe that, to a large extent, that condition has transpired. At least it has for me!

Dick graduated, I believe, in 1963 and went on to earn a medical degree at the University of Texas Medical School in Dallas. I've kept up with Dick off and on over the years. He spent most of his professional life in the Austin area, and we've gathered at a couple of reunions in the late 1900's. In 2018, he suffered a stroke that confined him, and his medical practice office was closed.

Willie graduated in 1963, I believe, and went on to be a successful aerospace engineer in the industry surrounding NASA (National Aerospace Administration). I didn't keep up with Willie. We did see each other once in the late 1960's. He visited us at hour home in the inner-city home we had in New Orleans. His being an engineer in the space industry, he was in New Orleans to be at NASA For some reason, our paths crossed after my retirement, perhaps around 2005. I learned that when the space industry downsized, he was out in California. He acquired a Bar-B-Que restaurant, and had a successful several decades in that business. He married Sarah (Sally) Farnell, and they had three children. We exchanged e-mails two or three times a year, till one day a daughter, Christine (Christy) Mynar Davis, returned my e-mail to report his passing, which was on July 16, 2012.

Christy and I agree to keep in touch. We did that over the intervening years. In the summer of 2017, Christy contacted me to say that her sister, Laurie Mynar Anderson, was moving to Frisco, TX where her husband, Cal, had taken a new employment position! Christy said she'd visit Texas soon and would welcome our having a meeting! So, this developed to be on Tuesday, September 19, 2017 when Laurie, Christy and their mother, Sally, all came out to our home in Aurora for a delightful visit and lunch. It really was an occasion to meld our families together that had had such a distant relation from years ago!

My last semester load was building up enough that I elected to complete the report writing project after the Christmas holiday. Unfortunately, that misinformed delay caused my failure in that course. It then became necessary for me to remain for one more semester to graduate! And graduate I did, as here is a photograph of my BBA Degree of June 1962.



Not only was I pleased to have graduated from the same University as did both of my parents (1925 & 1926), what I did not know is that all three of my children later attended the University of Texas at Austin, two of whom graduated from there and the other graduated from the University of Texas at Dallas.

The initial response to graduating a year later than normal was simply unfortunate. However, in the following chapter, it will be seen that this next-year delay, truly, was a delightful provision for my life! It led me to my wife!

Some other things shaped my life toward the end of my time at the University of Texas. A major factor in the lives of men was the Draft. That is the nickname for <u>Conscription in the United States</u>, the government's process for selecting eligible men to go into mandatory military service for at least two years.

The United States have operated a military draft function in four different periods of military conflict in our history, the most recent one, which affected

me, was from 1940 through 1973. Any male age 18 or over had a mandatory duty to serve, unless that was some reason to delay or exempt that man from serving. My exemption had been a delay during my full-time pursuit as an enrolled college student.

Knowing that military service was an obligation for me, my thoughts were to decide what I would like to learn or accomplish in whatever military service that would be mine. Knowing that possessing a college degree would make me eligible to be trained as an officer, which was much better compensation and better professional opportunities. Men who were drafted without that credential or without interest in being an officer would serve only two years. Officers had to serve five years. Of course, in either case, when the end of those terms occurred, the military man would have the voluntary option to re-enlist.

My choice was to join the Navy and to be trained as a Navy Jet Fighter Pilot. However, if I could not qualify for Pilot School, my preference would be drafted into Army service for only two years. The Navy recruiting officer, who was encouraging me to join, arranged for me to take a "practice" Navy Pilots entrance exam. I passed, so made formal application to join the United States Navy.

The processing for my application including a background check, which revealed that a physician had treated me one year at my age of 15 for Asthma, a disease that disqualified anyone from being a pilot. So, my Navy application was rejected. For a while, it appeared that the Military Draft Board was going to take me as a two-year Army soldier. It was arranged for me to have a physical exam. After a few weeks, I was informed that my category in the Draft Board was changed to the permanent category of 4F, which meant permanent exemption from any duty for Military Service!

This Draft Board determination came midway through my last Semester in 1962. One emotion was great relief about not being drafted into the Army Infantry for two years. Another realization is that most all students graduating without plans or obligations for military service had already interviewed with employers recruiting among the graduating class for jobs. With just a few weeks left till graduation, I needed quickly, somehow, to find a job!

Many times, in my classes about business, one of the frequent examples of companies with outstanding personnel policies was International Business Machines, Inc. Yes, the same IBM for whom I'd worked part time while at Austin College. The local branch office was consulted, and an appointment made with a manager for an employment interview. Upon arrival at the office, I completed an employment application. I didn't even have a resume prepared.

The manager interviewing me was Mr. Tony Luttrell. He was the Sales Manager for the Electric Typewriter Division. Apparently, he assumed I wanted to sell electric typewriters, and I affirmed certainly being interested in that. Such had not entered my mind, but there was a need to be interested in whatever he may

be willing to employ me to do! After a series of interviews, an offer was made, which was accepted without hesitation. The begging salary was at an annual rate of \$6,000! That may not be much in today's understanding, but, to put it into perspective, that was in the top 10% of salaries being offered that year to graduating seniors.

Knowing now about what I know of <u>being a Christian</u>, I should have prayed about the rightness in God's plan for my life before accepting this job. Having embraced belief in the God of the Holy Scriptures for quite some time, my college days had included experiencing some backsliding in my spiritual life. In retrospect, However, I did not. The need for employment was so vivid that the offer was immediately embraced. In retrospect, I now acknowledge that the Hand of God's Providence for me was in this transaction, and it resulted in new directions in my life that shaped the marvelous life I've been privileged to live.

In negotiating the details about the work, my assertion of hope was to be assigned to Dallas for numerous reasons. Supposedly, the district in which I was hired would place me somewhere in Texas. I was to begin work on Monday, June 4, 1962. On Friday, June 1, I was called and instruction to appear for work on Monday at the IBM Branch Office at 2640 Canal Street in New Orleans, Louisiana!

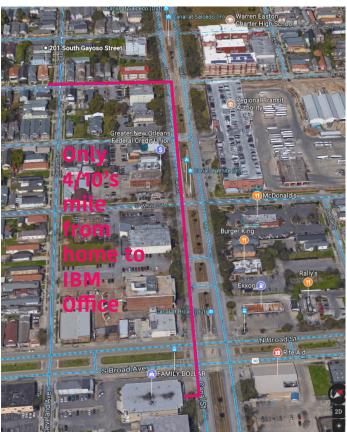
My college graduation service was Saturday, June 2, the day I needed to drive, if I was to take the new employment. I skipped my college graduation! Our class was so big that we weren't to walk across the stage to receive the diploma anyway. At the appointed moment in the service, the class would be asked to stand in mass, with the proclamation being made for completion of work.



At that time in my life, everything I owned in the world could fit into my newly purchased car. My father had helped me to select a 1962 Chevrolet Biscayne 4door, looking like the image here. Mine was slightly darker brown. The job of typewriter salesman required having a 4-door sedan to haul demonstrators in and out of offices. It was at the low end of the price line. My recollection was that its price was about \$2,400. Dad put a few hundred dollars down for me, and I paid about \$90/month for the next two years.

Saturday morning, with car fully loaded at my parents' San Antonio home, I set out for New Orleans!

Chapter 9 First Post-College Occupation – New Orleans, Louisiana



I drove from the San Antonio home of my parents to New Orleans on Saturday, June 2, for 540 miles, taking about 10 hours. Arriving about 5:00 PM, I located the office at 2640 Canal Street. It was on the southeast quadrant of Canal Street and S. Broadway. Then I looked around the residential area nearby for rental property.

I found a rooming house at 201 S. Gayoso Street, about four blocks from my office! It was a room rental where you walked down the hall for a community bathroom and shower facilities. The structure was old seemingly in need of maintenance. The house today in the photo here obviously since then has been renovated and painted nicely.

I was pleased to find cost-effective housing, versus having to lodge in a more expensive hotel. After all, it's be a couple of weeks before my first paycheck!

I arrived at 8:00 AM on Monday morning, June 4, 1962 to report to my new Sales Manager, Mr. Fred A. Brewer. His welcome was warm and friendly. There was another new Salesman coming on board that day, Mr. Larry F. Hatfield, freshly graduated from <u>Mississippi State University</u>.

Soon we were in a Sales Representatives meeting



that morning, being introduced to the four existing Salesmen: James Basham, C. J. Bellow, Lee Aggerton, and Jim Sanders. Larry's positon was a new positon and my position was replacing a recently departed Salesman, Mr. Fred Tarver. We learned how Larry and I would be in training classes in the beginning weeks, as well as going out with the Salesmen as they called on offices of customers and prospects, to see them operate. All of what we experienced endorsed the conclusion of how high of a class IBM was as an employer, and how excellent were its goods and services.



Typewriters were the best and most expensive on the market. The models we sold ranged in price from about \$500 to \$800, whereas most of the competing brands (Royal, Smith-Corona, Underwood, etc.) sold for about half those amounts. The most popular models at that time were like this one above. The carriage would go back and forth as the typist stroked the keys. The middle photo shows the type bars that were propelled to the paper in response to the character being pressed. The photo on the right shows the type face that stuck the paper, affixing an image. You can note that the upper portions were all in capital letters, and those below were lower case. That design generally in typewriters of all kinds gave rise to the terms of Upper Case and Lower Case in lettering.

In those days, the use of electric typewriters was growing, but still most offices had manual typewriters. I some aspects, our sales competition was not necessarily another brand of electric typewriter, but rather trying to get the typewriter purchaser to buy our electric, versus spending a lot less money on a manual typewriter.

In the overall typewriter market, the growing percentage of sales for electric typewriters was about 50% of the market. Of that overall 50%, IBM's share of that was something like 70% (or about 35% of the overall typewriter market).





Just the year before, at the July annual 100% Percent Club of IBM Salesmen, an entirely new concept in electric typewriters was introduced. It was the <u>IBM</u> <u>Selectric!</u>

The moving carriage was eliminated, as well as all the 88 type bars. Instead, a golf ball size Typing Element was interchangeable in the typewriters. In the former typewriters, the user was confined to only one type style. With this new model, the user could select a large supply of type styles! That is the source of the name, "Selectric." Typists could "Select" whatever type style wanted.

However, this new "ball" kind of typewriter had a lot of reluctance among the buying public. This is illustrated by looking at the sales quota assigned to us. In my first year, we were expected to sell 12 of the carriage typewriters, but only were expected to sell two of the Selectrics! I'll always remember the most spectacular sale ever seen in our local office. Jim Sanders' sales territory was along the nearby Mississippi Gulf Coast. He had been working long and hard on a large school system in the latter part of 1962. Finally, the purchase decisions were made by the School Board, and the order placed the first week in January for something like 150 IBM Electric Typewriters! Jim not only achieved his entire year's quota in the first week of the year, he ended up being the first IBM Salesman nationally achieving the whole year's quota!

Of course, Salesmen always continued selling after whenever they passed their annual quota. It just was a goal to represent a minimum expected. About 2/3's of the sales force nationally earned a trip to the annual 100% club.

My sales territory covered much of what is described as uptown New Orleans, meaning the mostly residential area on the lakeside (north) of the Mississippi River and running upstream to the Jefferson Parish line. My one big customer

was Tulane University, from where perhaps half of my earned income (commissions) came. Later, after our marriage, I was assigned the Tulane Medical School in the central business district of New Orleans. That was nice, because, by the, Suzanne had acquired a position in a research laboratory there as a medical technologist.

During that first week in New Orleans, my thoughts ran to wondering who in my new city was anyone among my friends? My recollection went to James Walls, whom I'd known back at my Austin College Days. I'd heard he was working in his first postcollege employment at J. P. Penney Stores there. Being older than me, he'd already been there a year. After contacting him, I asked him to introduce me to people.



The whole story about him introducing me to Suzanne Boggess in told in Chapter 10, the next chapter in this autobiography! We met on Sunday evening, June 17, 1962. Our meeting and first date was certainly a whirlwind experience which introduced me to the woman of my life! As this autobiography is being composed in 2017, we are celebrating our 55th anniversary of such a wonderful and outstanding marriage!

My whole orientation about family and the future was such that my assumption was to become married and to raise a family. It's just that such events were off in the "distant" future for the time being. Suddenly, this acquaintance with Suzanne welled up in my mind to believe I'd met the partner intended for our lives together! Though I'd had social relationships and felt romantic occasionally, this was a real feeling I'd never experienced! This Suzanne Margaret Boggess young lady was the most attractive person to me that I've ever known, not only in the beauty of her appearance, but in the beauty of her person and as a woman of genuine quality to the best known to me in all my experience, either previously, and proven later now for over 55 years!

Suzanne was a Georgia-born and Mississippi-raised southern girl, whose college major in biology brought her to New Orleans for her first post college professional work as a <u>Medical Technologist</u> at Mercy Hospital.

Here she is in a high school photo.



Suzanne had already placed her membership in <u>Canal</u> <u>Street Presbyterian Church</u> (CSPC). Though raised in the Southern Baptist Church, she'd joined the Presbyterian Church while a student at <u>Mississippi</u>



<u>Southern University</u>. The Baptist Student Union there would not accept her if she danced, a social activity

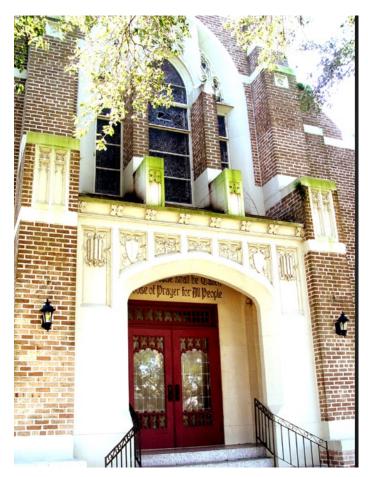
she wished to pursue. Additionally, a friend she'd known at Southern was Kenneth Owens, a boy who'd grown up in his family at CSPC. Ken was active in the CSPC College & Career fellowship group, in which Suzanne also enjoyed. Other friends in the group Suzanne met were Judy, who later married Ken. There was Larry Jones, Edwin Nelson, Jerry Brooks and Raul Biscuccia (a Cuban refugee) members there. There was a girl whose name passes me that dated Jerry and who later married him. The solo pastor there was the Rev. Mr. Robert A. Pitman (who later earned a PhD). Here is her apartment dwelling at 813 N. Alexander Street.



Suzanne had been dating a Tulane Medical School student (whose name I'm leaving unknown on purpose). Though she did not have an engagement ring when I met her, the general decision had been made by them to be married. He was an unusual young man, having emigrated to the United States as a refugee, fleeing from Communist persecution in Europe, since he'd been a leader in the protesting youth movement and his father was a military officer opposing Communism. He's grown up in the Roman Catholic environs, but did not proves a belief in God. He was willing to join a church with Suzanne, but she was to know that he did not support the assumed beliefs.

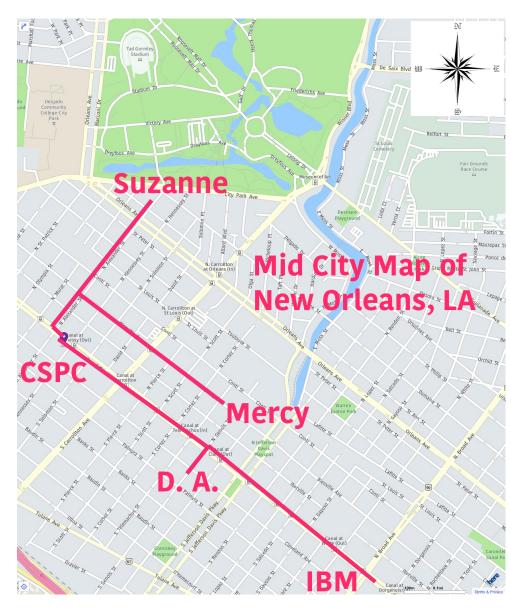
Rev. Pitman had advised Suzanne not to marry the young man, based upon the Biblical exhortation not to be unequally yoked (2 Corinthians 6:14). My appearance on the New Orleans scene took place shortly after the unbelieving intended for marriage medical student departed town for a summer employment. The whole story of my meeting Suzanne and our unusual first date is the subject of Chapter 10 in this autobiography. I am forever thankful to Rev. Pitman's favor on my behalf toward Suzanne.





Rev. Pitman was not acquainted with me, but was with my father, whose Presbyterian pastorates mainly were in Texas. Rev. Pitman had graduated from Austin Presbyterian Theological Seminary, Austin, Texas, and served his first call to ministry as pastor of the First Presbyterian Church of Lufkin, Texas. The biographical story about my father is the subject of Chapter 33 in this autobiography. With Rev. Pitman knowing my Presbyterian background and knowing of my romantic pursuit of Suzanne, began to encourage the development of our relationship.

The College and Career Group at CSPC was sponsored and guided by one of the elders on the Session of the church, and his wife. They were Ted (probably a nickname for Theodore) and Marylyn McFarland. He was an engineer in the petroleum industry, which was a strong element in the Louisiana economy. Besides the regular Sunday evening gatherings, the McFarland's took our group to various social outings on Saturdays, such as picnicking on the Mississippi Gulf Coast beaches, etc.



The geography in which all these new relationships were blossoming was tightly defined in what was called the Mid-City of New Orleans.

My rooming house, 201 S. Gayoso, was 4/10th of a mile from my office, 2640 Canal Street. The CSPC, 4202 Canal Street, was 1.1 mile from my rooming house. The CSPC was ³/₄'s mile from Suzanne's apartment, 813 N. Alexander. She lived about a mile from **Mercy Hospital**

where she worked. Mercy was on Bienville, between N. Jefferson Parkway and N. Telemachus Street.

Canal Street was the main street of New Orleans, running from the Mississippi River docks at the central business district, on out toward Lake Pontchartrain Lake. The other main street of New Orleans was St. Charles Avenue, which ran from the downtown district, winding upriver.

Another characteristic of the city to which I'd not previously been accustomed was the very well organized and frequently running public transit system of buses and street cars.



The downtown district ran along the Mississippi River flow. Here's a view from the west side of the River.

Of course, New Orleans is known for its famous <u>Mardi Gras celebrations</u> annually. That celebration is a period of several weeks, with parades going through various parts of the City, sponsored by parade organizations known as Krews. One popular parade with us at CSPC was <u>the Mid-City Krew Parade</u> which came by the church around 1:00 PM on a Sunday. Worshippers that day knew to bring their picnic lunches and lawn blankets/chairs to greet the parade.



Mese Falcon, the "manager" of our Children's Sunday School Department had a husband who was a member of that Krewe, Mr. Johnny Falcon. He made sure he and his fellow revelers were extra general in throwing out the parade favors at our location! Our first child, Taylor, attended his first Mardi Gras Parade when he was only three weeks old! The crowds of people downtown were exceptionally crowded, as illustrated in this photo.



And who remembers phones on the walls of public buildings outdoors, on the sidewalks, operated with nickels, dimes or quarters?



Here are some more normal photos of downtown New Orleans from years ago.





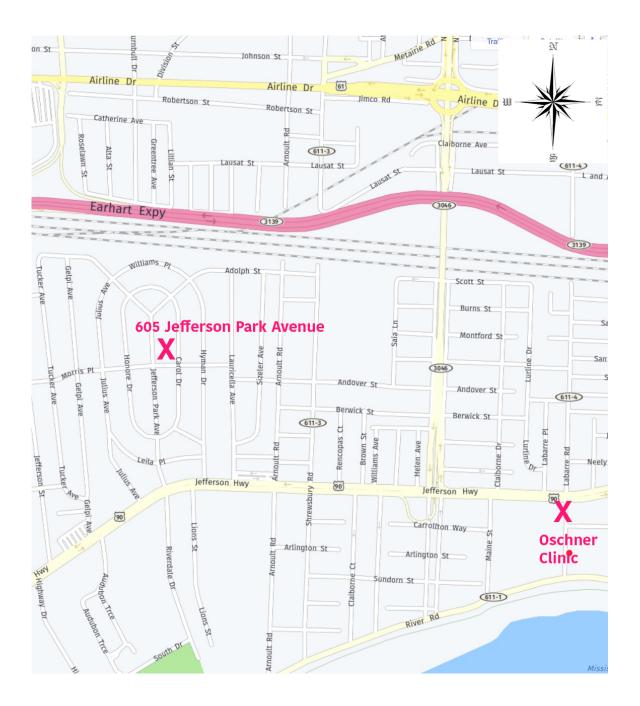


Here's a photo entering the <u>French Quarter</u>. And here is the famous <u>Café Du Monde</u>, where delicious donuts, covered in powdered sugar and Cajun coffee were served. This is where quite many my dates with Suzanne included.





Not wanting to remain very long in the rooming house of my residence on S. Gayoso, Jerry Brooks and Raul Biscuccia teamed up with me to rent a twobedroom furnished house out in Jefferson Parish, near Oschner Clinic. My recollection of the address is 605 Jefferson Park Avenue. The widower landlady lived in the third bedroom, which had a private bath and exterior exit. That was about 5.5 miles to the church, and 6.25 miles to my IBM Office.



Suzanne had come to New Orleans to complete her senior year in college for qualification as a Medical Technologist at the world-renowned Oschner Clinic. Notice that Oschner Clinic where Suzanne's education was completed, is

nearby in the map on the previous page. She met Murley Gaudreaux and Waynette Norman as students in that program, and they shared an apartment together. At the completion of their degrees in the Spring of 1961, they each took positons at New Orleans Hospital laboratories, Suzanne going to the Roman Catholic Mercy Hospital on Bienville, at N. Jefferson Davis Parkway. My taking five years to complete my college degree is the explanation of why she completed hers a year earlier. She'd been working at Mercy Hospital a year when I met her.



Part of the spirit of adventure I think in her was the fact that she owned a 1960 red Fiat Spider Convertible sports car! Here's an image I found of that model recently. Unfortunately, I never saw it. She had continual auto repair needs for it, so it was sold shortly before my meeting her.

My infatuation grew as my encouragement grew that Suzanne was giving me serious heed as our relationship matured. My experience at giving heed to God's directions in my life was not practiced nearly as much as it should have. However, this new-found friend and partner was blossoming in such a way that I was recognizing God's hand in selecting important decisions in my life.

There had been a recent occasion when Suzanne traveled with her intended husband to her grandfather's farm near Macon, Mississippi, Thomas Shelton Boggess. Her father, Thomas Shelton (T. S.) and Alice Boggess then resided in Griffin, Georgia, came over to the family farm to meet the young man Suzanne wanted to present to her family. The sense that I gathered later was that his somewhat unorthodox experience coming from Europe did not sit well with her family. With his now being out of the scene, and with my coming into the scene, it came time for Suzanne to take me to the family farm to meet them. This was late July or early August 1962.

I found it to be a genuinely welcoming and friendly reception that Suzanne's family gave me. Immediately, there was comfort in my spirit with these future in-laws. Here's a photo of Suzanne and her mother back around 1939.

Suzanne's grandfather had arranged for horses to be brought to the farm for the two of us to go riding. My being from Texas, I'm sure, brought confidence in her grandfather's view that I would know what I was doing in riding horses. What he didn't know was that the only horseback riding I'd ever done mostly was rental ponies at local carnivals. Here's a photo showing



Suzanne's early horseback riding experiences, in 1952, being handed a trophy she'd won in the West Point (MS) County Fair horse competitions!



What I didn't know was that these were two spirited quarter horses, full of vim and vigor! Suzanne had grown up in the agricultural setting with horses. She even rode racing ponies in their county fairs! At least, I knew from which side to approach the horse for mounting! Before my foot was in the stirrup on the other side, my horse bolted off into a fast gallop for about 30 yards. Then he kicked his rear hooves up into the air, while twisting around completely!

Through some miracle of God's Grace, I came down straddling the

horse in the saddle, and managed not to fall! Finally, as I gathered my senses about myself, Suzanne's grandfather could be seen walking back to the farm house, looking down at the ground and shaking his head! Obviously, he was not impressed!

However, the rest of the weekend transpired wonderfully well, and it was a joy and delight for me to meet my future in-laws. The rest of the weekend provided for still more unusual twists.

We had driven to the farm in my car. IBM had me scheduled for a week of training sessions in New York City, beginning Monday. We drove to Jackson,



Mississippi from where I would fly to NYC. Suzanne was to drive my car back to New Orleans and keep it for the week. Before driving out of Mississippi, a State Highway Patrolman pulled her over for exceeding the speed limit.

He asked for her driver's license. Her home during college years was her parents' home in Griffin, Georgia. She had not renewed it as a

Louisiana License, even though being there a year or more. She still thought of home residency as with her parents. He asked where she lived, which was reported as New Orleans. He asked why the car had Texas license plates? She said the car



belonged to someone else. Does that car owner live in Texas? No, he'd just moved to New Orleans a few weeks ago, and had not yet changed titles. Was the car owner a relative or family member? Well, no, he's just a friend. Why are you driving his car today?

She explained about my having to fly to New York City for work. The Highway patrolman began to shake his head. Finally, Suzanne asked if he knew Mississippi Highway Patrolman Charles L. Staten who lived in Macon on Chancellor's Court, the town where her grandfather lived? Acknowledging that he did know of him, she asked him to call him to verify that Suzanne Boggess was OK. Apparently in exasperation, he let her go and said just to slow down! All that's too much to make up!

I joined CSPC by transferring my membership by letter from the Highland Park Presbyterian Church of San Antonio, Texas, where my father was Pastor. Our whirl wind courtship progressed quickly, as a marriage date was set for September 30, 1962, a mere 105 days after we met! In retrospect, Suzanne and I agree that more time should have been provided before the wedding for our respective family members could get to know each other. We did not have sufficient time for family bonding to take place.

Suzanne never saw my parents face-to-face until the day before the wedding. That also was the first day that her parents met my parents. None of our siblings had seen each other either. God has blessed our marriage with exceptionally good things. We do recommend a better time elapse for family bonding for couples desiring to be married!



We decided to have the wedding on Sunday at 1:00 PM, following the weekly worship service. Not having much in the way of acquaintances in the congregation, and knowing that only a few relatives were coming from out of town, the only wedding invitation expressed was an announcement in the church worship bulletin that morning for any of the congregation who wished to stay over for our wedding ceremony.



Suzanne's grandmotherly friend at CSPC, Mese Falcon,

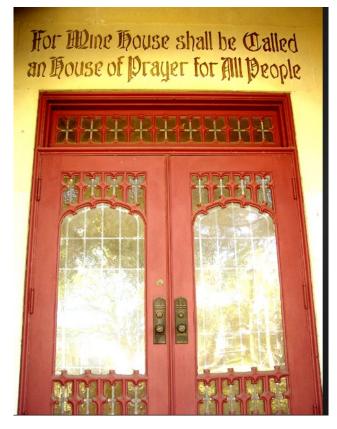
learned of the wedding and that there were no special decoration plans. She took it upon herself to bring in arrangements of flowers to place around the sanctuary during the hour between the end of worship and the wedding! What a special surprise for us. We have always been so grateful for her generosity, her love and her thoughtfulness.



Preparation had not been made for photographic capturing of our wedding, so we are without such documentation. There is one photo of us exited the front door of the church. We're uncertain who took it, but think it may have been my friend, Richard Hall (Dick) White.

The inscription over the church doors was a scripture citation that has always been meaningful to Suzanne and me. It's a quote

from a portion of Isaiah 56:7, *"… for my house shall be called an house of prayer for all people."* Here is a closer photograph of that inscription.



On the day of our wedding, Suzanne demonstrated her talents at multi-tasking. As usual, she sang in the church choir for the 11:00 AM worship service. Then, she went quickly to her apartment, changed into her wedding dress, and returned to the church in time for the 1:00 PM wedding! WOW!



and in 2002 she received the <u>Southern</u> <u>Foodways Alliance</u>. In the April 2017 issue of Southern Living Magazine (page 88), her Commander's Palace was listed as #1 of the top 10 restaurants in the southeast quadrant of the United States. Our wedding reception dinner was at this marvelous place of culinary excellence.

Instead of having the traditional wedding reception, we planned a dinner for the family and out of town relatives, about 30 of us, in the garden of a famous New Orleans restaurant, <u>Commander's</u> <u>Palace</u>. It has been a long-established place of seafood culinary excellence continuously since 1893 at that location! It was a delightful experience, and we are grateful to Suzanne's parents who underwrote the whole affair.

Commander's Palace is an awardwinning Haute Creole restaurant owned by a family whose current matriarch is Ms. <u>Ella Brennan</u>, born in 1925. She received the <u>James Beard Foundation</u> <u>Lifetime Achievement Award</u> in 2009,





Since my employment at IBM had only been since June 4, only three days of vacation were earned at the time of our marriage. We drive Sunday afternoon to the Mississippi Gulf Coast, and lodged at a shoreline motel selected at random! Wednesday afternoon, we headed back to New Orleans to attend work on Thursday! Not a very event filled trip, but we enjoyed ourselves very much for those precious three days!

Our initial place of residence was the furnished rental home at 605 Jefferson Park Avenue, the home previously shared by me with Jerry Brooks and Raul Biscuccia. Our social life immediately centered in and around the people of Canal Street

Presbyterian Church. A good bond was formed soon in the Young Couples Sunday School Class. It included Jim and Carol Walls, the couple whose marriage provided such an unusual venue for the first date of Suzanne and myself. It also included Charlotte Snead. Her husband, Joe, did not attend, as he was a Surgery Resident at <u>Charity Hospital</u>, the large central public hospital in New Orleans.



By early 1963, Suzanne and I sensed the need to be closer to church, to her work and to my work. So, we rented an unfurnished apartment on the 2nd floor at 4307 Baudin Street, just three blocks uptown from the church. That's when we began purchasing our first furniture. Our bed came from the railroad salvage center! We weren't investing a lot of money in furniture!



Training by IBM for me took place in New York City in July 1962, where I graduated from a highly professional 28-member Marketing Class #16208, documented via the class photograph on the wall in my office now at home. To me, the quality of that class was like a high-class advanced graduate course! It was amazing what all I learned.

Shortly thereafter, my IBM supervision had some of our sales force, including me, to take the famous Dale Carnegie Course as it came to New Orleans. Carnegie was an American writer and lecturer and the developer of famous courses in selfimprovement,

salesmanship, corporate training, public speaking, and interpersonal skills. There was a lot of valuable insights for we sales representatives to know and to learn.

Our three children, all born in New Orleans, are Taylor Marcus (January 26, 1965); Tiffany Lenn (August 4, 1966) and Todd Wittman (January 26, 1969). These Presbyterian children were delivered by a Roman Catholic

physician (Dr. George Frank Sustendal, Jr., born May 18, 1917) at a Jewish Hospital, Touro Infirmary! Today, the hospital is located at 1401 Foucher Street, but in our day there, it fronted on the other street at 3500 Prytania Street.

I worked for IBM corporation in New Orleans for 1962-69, serving in sales, training, and later in administrative positions. At the end of 1966, my assignment was changed to an administrative position. Between then and my resignation in the September 1969, my office was in three different locations in New Orleans.

I was elected a Deacon December 16, 1962, then an Elder in 1963, soon becoming the Clerk of Session at the Canal Street Presbyterian Church, located at 4302 Canal Street. We had experiences about being in debt and having occasion to reside in a slum area of New Orleans. <u>Here is that story!</u>

In 1969, full-time Christian work began for me as Administrator of the <u>Trinity</u> <u>Christian Community</u>, an inner-city ministry originated by <u>Canal Street Church</u>, which later became a New Orleans Presbytery outreach, then finally an interdenominational work that still exists in 2011. That Presbytery name became the Presbytery of South Louisiana.



God's hand was moving in the lives of Suzanne and me, particularly in those days, and we sought to find His meaning and directions for our lives. It was then that our participation and interest in the inner-city ministry of Canal Street Presbyterian Church drew us to the conviction that we should buy a home and move into that neighborhood. It was a five-year experience, which included my leaving my work at IBM after a couple of years living there, and thus began my career in Christian ministry. We purchased the home with another couple, Dr. Joseph A. and Charlotte Snead. Sharing home ownership is a very interesting experience. One that often was challenging, but which we remember fondly. We have kept in touch with the Snead's over the years, their living most of their lives since then in West Virginia, though they

did live a while in Georgia. Today, in 2017, Charlotte <u>maintains a website</u> of commentary on living life.

As I recalled, we purchased the home together for the asking price of \$20,000. I see in 2017, it's <u>valued at about \$320,000</u>! The photo here was taken in 2016, by our friend Michelle Cohen, and the house looks pretty much the same as when we lived there!

We had many fine and blessed experiences in New Orleans as we built our family and focused our Christian life on Canal Street Presbyterian Church and the ministries to which it reached in its ministry.

Our first pastor there was the Rev. Dr. Robert A. Pitman. He and my father conducted the marriage ceremony for Suzanne and me on September 30, 1962. He took a call to ministry at Casa Linda Presbyterian Church in Dallas in 1965. The Rev. Dr. Matthew McGowan was our next pastor. In fact, I was on the church's Pulpit Committee (the search committee) that brought Matt to us. Next was the Rev. Mr. Robert T. Henderson, who was present when we moved to St. Louis in 1972.



By age 30, I had served in the <u>Presbyterian Church</u> as a Deacon, Elder, Clerk of Session, was moderator of a major standing committee of New Orleans Presbytery (now named the Presbytery of South Louisiana), and was a member of its Presbytery's Council. I was elected an alternate in the Fall of 1971 to the 1972 General Assembly of the Presbyterian Church, U.S. That representative role did not take place, because of how our lives changed where we lived in the intervening months. We moved to St. Louis!

The first honor of service was the election as a Deacon in the Canal Street Presbyterian Church on Sunday, December 2, 1962, and installed on Sunday, January 20, 1963 for a three-year term. However, God's providence turned differently, and my first election as an Elder was the following December, and installation was January 19, 1964. Partly because of my profession being a sales representative for IBM Corporation, selling typewriters, my assignment among the Elders was to become their Clerk of Session, the person to record the events and decisions taking place in the Session Meetings, which was the guidance to be administrated for the whole church. It also included generating written communications on behalf of the Session when that was needed.

Suzanne sang in the church choir, and occasionally did I. I was mentored by a couple of men, John *Rolland* Krogsgard and <u>Jules Wogam (*Ted*) Hillary</u>. Our choir director was Mr. <u>W. Monroe Stephenson</u>, born in 1935, a New Orleans attorney directing the choir and playing the organ part time. He'd graduated from Alcee Fortier High School in New Orleans, and was a 1958 graduate of Tulane University School of Law. Monroe also was a French horn player in the New Orleans Symphony. He married a young woman named Pamela, but later they divorced. Rolland and his wife, Betty, were married June 10, 1950. Rolland

died about 2000, and Betty died October 25, 2008. Ted Hillery was born about 1929, and he married a woman from Germany, Irmagard (*Irma*). After we moved from New Orleans, they moved to Slidell, Louisiana, perhaps 50 miles east of New Orleans. Their address was 34649 W. Dubuisson Road, Slidell, 70460. They adopted a daughter, Heidi A. Hillery, a child born in the 1960s.

Another family with whom we grew close was Dan and <u>Jane Sikes</u>. They had a daughter, <u>Dawn</u>, and a son, <u>Danny</u>. We have been able to make occasional contact with this family over the years, and are Facebook friends with some of them. They live over on the West Bank of the Mississippi in a town named Gretna.

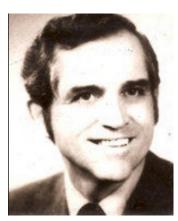
We were good friends with Larry Jones, whom Suzanne knew at Canal Street Church even before she and I met. While we were there, Larry married Jacquelyne (Jackie). Later, they divorced. Jackie died March 25, 2017. Larry suffered some ill health in recent years, but I've lost how to contact him. His name is too common to be easy to research in a metropolitan area.

One experience for me while living in New Orleans and employed at IBM had to do with my relationship to tobacco! Read this story about <u>"Making an Ash of One's Self."</u>

There was a Southern Baptist Seminary Professor who, with his wife, frequented our Canal Street Presbyterian Church. Here's a fun story about them, <u>"Pay Attention to Who Sits at our Feet."</u>

My relationship with IBM continued for a while, as that local office wanted to reach out to an inner-city neighborhood such as where we were working. It was a blessing that my former employer wanted to involve themselves in the new work to which I had felt called. You will see in the end of this chapter how my brother-in-law, Andy Jumper, was involved in that.

We assumed this was a temporary work in Christian ministry, and that we would return to regular secular work in a few short years. That was wrong! That temporary tenure in Christian work lasted through 37 more years and in three different Christian ministries before my 2004 retirement.



Another ministry activity in which we were involved at Canal Street Church was with our Associate Pastor, the Rev. Mr. William Joseph Brown, who was starting an Inner-City Ministry for our church to reach people in what was called the Irish Channel, an area that could be described a New Orleans slum. The constituency of that ministry evolved mostly African American teenagers (trending toward getting into trouble) and to white adults with criminal records or backgrounds, or even in current criminal activity. At one point, Suzanne and I developed a leading that we were to reside in the Irish Chanel to be among the people.

There was another young couple at Canal Street Church who also had interests in the ministry. We found a 16-room Classic Greek Revival architrave home constructed in 1866! In May of 1966, Dr. Joseph A. Snead and his lovely bride, Charlotte, purchased that home at 1619 Prytania Street, and proceeded to convert it into a duplex! Not long after that, Pastor Brown and his family (Mark Lou and their three children) rented a similar large old home in which to reside. We were beginning to build a community there. Soon, two single men joined the staff of Trinity Christian Community (the new name of this ministry), and they resided down there as well.

This evolvement and development spiritually in our lives had a main element to be the conviction to be out of debt! We lived and worked down there till 1972, when we moved to Saint Louis. My full time Christian work on the TCC staff began in January 1970.

At that time, our Pastor at Canal Street Church was Matthew McGowan, a Godly man who brought much blessing to our lives. During the transition from resigning my secular occupation, living in the inner-city slum area with no income for a few months, Matt exhorted the Session of Elders at our church to provide some monthly income till the new salary began at Trinity Christian Community.



I re-established contact with Matt & Louise on Facebook in 2009. As I write this in 2018, they both are alive and kicking! They are ages 90 and 92! They live in Gainesville, Georgia.

In addition to that help Matt motivated from the church, one day I came home to find Pastor Matt on a step ladder, installing the new hanging ceiling we needed replaced in one of our rooms! He was such a dear man and friend in so many ways!

This neighborhood around 1619 Prytania Street was a crime-ridden area with five bars within a block our house, and there were five instances of gun fire or gun fights in our immediate block in the five years of our residence. After a while, we became known as residents there who sought to for the benefit of the neighborhood, and acceptance by the neighbors enable our Christian witness to grow. We learned much through the experiences God led us and allowed us to have. Our church, Canal Street Presbyterian, called onto its staff the Rev. Mr. William (Bill) J. Brown, part of whose duties were to work in the neighborhood there we were. Finally, through Bill's vision, the ministry became Trinity Christian Community.



Our part of Prytania Street was just down river from the prestigious <u>New Orleans</u> <u>Garden District</u>, which ranged all the way up river to the Audubon Park and Tulane University Campus. It was a sight to behold in old New Orleans culture and living.

We did learn that the thing in life that mattered most was to be in God's will. If we would be in His will, we would have nothing to fear, and that appropriate provision and protection would always be made for us. And, we do affirm that. We also had the Biblical principal of tithing confirmed in our experience. We had begun to give 10% of our income to God in his causes and even more before coming down to that neighborhood. But living there in poverty and changing work to the Christian ministry meant living on an economic shoestring. Even so, we always pulled out our 10% of everything to give to God's Kingdom, no matter how little we had. It never failed! We always were enabled to live on the remainder. It just works out that way in God's kingdom.

When moving into this 101-year old home at 1619 Prytania, there was a certain amount of repair and upgrading work needing to be done.

When our ministry pastor, Bill Brown, had a Sunday outreach to incarcerated young girls at 7:00 AM on Sundays, he recruited Suzanne to help him. What that meant for me was it became my task to ready our two toddlers (Todd hadn't yet been born) for our going to Canal Street Church. Bill and Suzanne would meet us at Church. Those was our days without owning an automobile, so the pattern was my taking the two children walking to the Street Car stop on St. Charles Avenue. During those days, an elderly woman member of our Church resided in a retirees' residence nearby. Meriam Newhouse was her name. She rode the same street car from the same stop as did we! Therefore, we became acquainted with Meriam, who became a special friend for us.

Meriam was the only daughter in a family of some half dozen sons, all of whom became attorneys. Meriam also graduated from Law School. However, in her young years, women were not welcomed in the legal profession. She was such an intelligent friend for us. It was a shame she did not manage to pursue a legal career.

Much of our spiritual growth took place as Suzanne and I became the adult volunteer ministers for the church's ministry to high school age students. Though we felt our recruitment was because someone thought we were



spiritually wise, in retrospect, we have seen how we just were ripe for beginning to learn what marvelous things God had in our lives, as experienced through what we did and through the kids in the group. One of the girls in that group was Mary Alice Arseneaux

Later in life, she married James (Jim) O. Idiaquez, and her nick name became Pinky. They resided near Houston, Texas and we crossed paths about 2015 to become Facebook Friends! This photo is from her recent Facebook photos. Likewise, a couple of kids in the group that dated each other were Douglas Boylan and Sandra (Sandy) Waddell. They became married, he acquired a PhD degree as an engineer and was on the research staff at the University of Alabama in Birmingham. We hooked up on Facebook in 2017.

When I posted a Facebook remembrance on May 30, 2018 about my 1957 high school graduation, it was Mary Alice (then with the her married name as Pinky Idiaquez) who wrote her recollection of times with Suzanne, me and our family back in the 1960s when we interfaced with her. Here's what she so lovingly said about the biographical sketch information to which reference was made on my post:

"You forgot the part about you and Suzanne being the BEST youth leaders at CSPC during the 60's. I have so many wonderful memories of such caring and loving leaders, all the rides home after fellowship (which was the only way I could attend night activities), and even your allowing me to babysit your precious children on a few occasions. That allowed me to earn enough \$ to attend Young Life camp in Colorado in'65. (A trip-of-a-lifetime for this economically poor girl who had never been out of Louisiana.) You drove far out of your way to pick me up and take me home when I babysat even though there were some girls in the youth group who lived closer to you. I thank God for putting you and Suzanne in my life during high school; for giving you two a heart for unruly young people, and for teaching us to love and serve Him."

CSPC she mentions is Canal Street Presbyterian Church in New Orleans, the site of our marriage and the beginnings of our learning Christian ministry. She touched my heart that day, and we know God has blessed her in the life given her as well. Praise be to God!

Another friend we knew from when Suzanne was in the Singles group at Canal Street Church was Charles Lincoln. I crossed paths with him on Facebook in 2018. During a week of spiritual renewal at our church, a contingent of lay Christians came from across the South to share their testimonies. The group was headed by Delores (Mrs. Robert G.) Fenn. She and her husband were members of the Casa Linda Presbyterian Church in Dallas. One couple was from Lubbock, Texas, Jack and Shelly Hall. a Methodist Church couple, who'd come to know my Presbyterian Pastor brother-in-law, the Rev. Dr. Andrew A. Jumper. Andy was the guest preacher for the services. It was in a meeting in our home after one of the services that we were with them and my brother-in-law, who was their friend, that they taught us more about the Holy Spirit, and they prayed for our filling, with speaking in tongues. That was in October 1965.

Dr. Andrew (Andy) A. Jumper, husband of my sister, Elizabeth, was serving as Pastor of the First Presbyterian Church in Lubbock, Texas, about a 1,200member congregation. In 1970, he responded to a call to be Pastor of the 2,500member Central Presbyterian Church of Clayton, St. Louis County, Missouri. In January 1972, he invited me and Suzanne to come to St. Louis to talk to him about coming to work as the Executive Administrator of the newly formed Covenant Fellowship of Presbyterians. It was a group of Presbyterian pastors and church members representing a conservative, evangelical perspective of understanding the Bible, and which was concerned by the perceived liberal trends forming in the leadership of the Presbyterian denomination.

Our immediate reply was that we felt fulfilled and committed to the continued work we were doing in New Orleans, and had no interest in looking for work elsewhere. Andy insisted on our coming to talk. We said we'd come if he understood we'd enjoy the visit with our family, and that we had no interest in moving. Such agreement was made, and we went to St. Louis for a few days.

It's an unusual feeling to walk through the paces of being shown and beckoned to come to something for which you have no intention of accepting. However, it was a pleasant experience, and we did enjoy being with Elizabeth, Andy and their four children.



Andy had arranged for a woman in their church, a realtor, to show us some prospective home for purchase. It really is interesting looking at homes shown by a realtor when you "knew" you weren't coming!

An additional factor was present, which I think did not affect our thinking about the new work position. Elizabeth had recently been diagnosed as having cancer, and was going through treatments. Of course, we were praying for her healing, but did not know what the future held for her. After four or five days in and around St. Louis, we were to return home to New Orleans on a Monday morning. Sunday night, Suzanne and I were talking about and praying about the recent few days and our resolve to continue in our New Orleans Calling. We were delving through Scriptures when we came across Romans 12:2, "*Do not be confirmed to this world, but be transformed by the renewal of your mind, that you may prove what is the will of God, what is good and acceptable and perfect.*"(RSV)



It dawned on both of our thoughts simultaneously that our minds were to be changed and **RENEWED** by accepting Andy's call, which was to be considered a call of God's plan and providence for our lives! We departed happily the next morning, telling Andy and Elizabeth and Andy that we would come! We even told

him on which house the realtor should place our offer! It's address was 7044 Northmoor Drive in University City, and the offer was to be something like \$27,000. Without telling us, Andy had the offer put in at \$25,000, and it was accepted! I see that in 2017, the <u>house is valued at \$350,000</u>! Wish we stilled owned it! Ha Ha!

Joe and Charlotte Snead decided they wanted to buy our 50% interest in our New Orleans home, and they offered that, based on a market value of \$25,000, its appreciated value after being there five years. That equity us provided the down payment we needed to purchase the St. Louis home.

A side note is that our realtor, Mrs. Paul (Charlotte) Dicken, was the mother of Sydney Kay Dicken Armistead. Elizabeth, my sister, died in 1973. On November 20, 1974, Andy remarried, and it was to Sydney, our realtor's daughter! So, we had an advance introduction to Andy's second family, without realizing it!

As we leave this chapter of New Orleans in our lives, the next chapter is the detailed story of Suzanne and me meeting and our prolonged first date. Chapter 11 takes up with our life in St. Louis area.

Chapter 10 Meeting & Claiming the Woman of my Life: Suzanne Margaret Boggess

There's a degree of background about the lives, both of mine and of Suzanne's, that influenced circumstances which brought us together. She is a Georgia-born, Mississippi-raised girl. I am a Texas-born and raised boy. Both of us, in God's Providence, found ourselves in our first post college professional work in New Orleans!

Though a lot of things on the surface explained how we managed to meet, on June 17, 1962, and develop quickly into the romance, which resulted in a marriage 105 days after we met. However, we give the credit to the loving Providence of God as He brought us, two of His Christian children, into the unity of life-long marriage. The year this chapter is being composed will bring the celebration of 56 years of love and joy in Christ Jesus and with each other on September 30, 2018.

The narrative about what brought us together, and the certainly unusual first date, has been composed into a story narrative. It is entitled, <u>"Meet Me in St. Louis.</u>" Click on the hyperlink to enjoy the story.

Chapter 11 Building Your Family with Spiritual Principles

God's Providence in our lives was such a blessing for us to meet and come together in New Orleans. We were the perfect husband and wife to form our marriage. Not only did we find mutual desire to pursue our Christian Faith together, but our bonding cemented the beginnings of our family.

Canal Street Presbyterian Church was the center of our life of faith, and we found solid relationships among the Christian friends there. We identified mutual goals in raising the children we planned for our family in the Christian beliefs that we had established. The Rev. Mr. Robert A. Pitman was our pastor who was a significant spiritual relationship for Suzanne and me. Shortly after he involved us in working with the high school age students, a new Associate Pastor was called to work alongside what we were doing, the Rev. Mr. William J. Brown.

We lived in New Orleans from our 1962 meeting and marriage until the Spring of 1982. Our family's three children were born January 26, 1965, Taylor Marcus, August 4, 1966, Tiffany Lenn, and January 26, 1969, Todd Wittman. It was a blessing that my father administered infant baptism to all three of our children.

We saw to the regular reading aloud of Biblical passages regularly to our children, and insured their regularly presence on Sundays at church. Suzanne and I pursued our own regular reading of Scriptures to keep God's Word fresh in our minds.

We always have valued having close ties <u>with a local church</u>, a Body of Christ. We have made it a central focus for our family as a place from which we received what all our family members needed in terms of fellowship, teaching, preaching, prayers for healing and the hearing of prophecy through the leadership of our pastors.

We have generated activities in the communities in which we lived, but did so in the context of representing our Christian orientation. This was done in community organizations, political organizations in in my interest of historical and genealogical organizations.

We have practiced and sought to teach our children the Biblical standard of giving a tithe (10% of our income) to our church, and that we should be free to give over-and-above to other causes to which we feel God directed our attention and to which our hearts were drawn.

Chapter 12 A Call to Saint Louis, Missouri

This Chapter in our lives covers our move in March 1972 from New Orleans to St. Louis County, Missouri. I was recruited by the Rev. Dr. Andrew A. Jumper to serve as Managing Editor of the Open Letter and Executive Director for the Covenant Fellowship of Presbyterians. Andy was the President of that organization, which had its offices in the <u>Central Presbyterian Church of</u> <u>Clayton, Missouri, 7700 Davis Drive, Clayton, MO</u>, the 2,500-member congregation for which he was its Senior Pastor. In addition, Andy was my brother-in-law, having married my sister, <u>Elizabeth Anne Sharpe Jumper</u>. Our years living in Missouri were destined to last till September 1982. The Jumpers had moved to St. Louis in 1970 at a time when Elizabeth had just been diagnosed with cancer. The new church for them rallied around the family in prayer for this health condition for Elizabeth. She graduated to Heaven December 26, 1973.

Their four children at the time of her death were <u>Mark Andrew</u> (19), Peter Sharpe (17), Kathryn Elizabeth (15) and Carol Anne (13). The funeral/burial was scheduled for December 30. However, a major winter snowstorm arrived, causing a reschedule to January 2 instead at <u>Oak Grove Cemetery, 7800 Saint</u> <u>Charles Rock Road, Normandy, Saint Louis County, Missouri</u>. The outdoor service was on a snow-covered ground. The weather that day was bone-chilling cold! My praying including a call for a brief service!

My work included serving to co-ordinate the publicity office of communications for the successful General Assembly Moderator's elections of <u>Dr. L. Nelson Bell</u> in 1972 and <u>of Dr. Jule Spach</u> in 1976 for the <u>Presbyterian Church, US</u> (the Southern Presbyterian Church). They both had served missionary careers for the PCUS. These were elective positions with other candidates running. Dr. Bell was the father-in-law of evangelist <u>Dr. Billy Graham</u>. Working with Dr. Bell gave a few occasions wherein paths were crossed with Dr. Graham. Graham was such a kind and outgoing man. It always was a pleasure and a wonder to sit in on a gathering of a handful of people in which he was present. His graduation to Heaven in 2018 was a world-wide recognized and celebrated event.

The work of the Covenant Fellowship of Presbyterians was three-fold. First, it was an advocacy group urging the leaders of the denomination to be Biblically centered and to pursue efforts of evangelism. Secondly, it generated Christian conferences, many of which were at the General Assembly conference grounds

in Montreat, North Carolina, but also were in various other locations in the South. This included a series of what were called Lay Renewals, evangelical and charismatic local church conferences led by lay people, rather than professional clergy. Those ministries would have ordained clergy as main preachers. Thirdly, efforts were generated to encourage fellowship between evangelical Presbyterians between local churches.

The Central Presbyterian Church was one of the leading supportive churches for the Covenant Fellowship of Presbyterians. Highland Park Presbyterian of Dallas, TX was the most financially supportive church for our work. Two other strongly supportive churches were from Tennessee: First Presbyterian Church, Nashville, and Lookout Mountain Presbyterian Church, Lookout Mountain, TN. A lot of other churches donated relatively minor, but encouraging amounts. Central Church, located at <u>7700 Davis Drive, Clayton, MO</u>, provided office space for my work.

Our home at <u>7044 Northmoor Drive, University City, MO</u>, was a pleasant location to live. It was convenient to the Flynn Park Elementary School our children attended, about a mile's walk or drive. It also was about two miles from my office at Central Church Presbyterian Church in Clayton, MO. Occasionally, advantage was taken of that proximity to improve my health by walking to work!

An interesting matter about the realtor through whom we purchased that home was a member of Central Church who was Charles Dicken, the mother of Sydney Dicken Armistead, the lady whom my brother-in-law, Dr. Andrew A. Jumper, pastor of Central Church, married after my sister graduated to Heaven!

It was a markedly more pleasant neighborhood in comparison to the Irish Channel Neighborhood where we lived in New Orleans. There was a Roman Catholic Church at the head of our neighborhood with an Elementary School. All the children in our neighborhood attended there, except our three children! Our public school, Flynn Park Elementary School, was populated with more than 50% Jewish children. So, we had interesting mixes of faith around us. All of them proved to be positive experiences.

Suzanne and I began involving ourselves in local political activity, attending meetings, etc. I begin working as an election clerk at the voting poll at the church in our neighborhood. We worked in the Republican Party activities. It

was not long before I was recruited to be the Election Judge for our Precinct in the Republican Party. Mrs. Earle Lionwebber was the Precinct Chair for our area. Suzanne and I were elected from our local Precinct to be Delegates to the Missouri State Republican Conventions of 1978 and 1980.

Flynn Park Elementary School was an outstanding opportunity for our children to experience. It was a little less than two miles from our home, but a walking shortcut made it only about a mile. Our children walked that route many times! This was in the 1970s, prior to the proliferation of so many school buses operating in our public-school society. During most of our time at Flynn Park, it had a principal named Robert Sloan, a former employee of IBM. He was outstanding as well, and led the school into many excellent paths. Sloan managed to work me into several parental volunteer positions at the school, which endured me to what was going on in the community and in the lives of our children.

==

Chapter 13 Coming Home to Texas (Dallas)

Moving in October 1982 from St. Louis County to Dallas, Texas was coming home to me. My family had resided in Dallas during my 9th through 12th grades in school, as well as through my first couple of college years (1954-59). My recruitment was to the title of Church Business Manager by the Rev. Dr. B. Clayton Bell, Senior Pastor of the Highland Park Presbyterian Church, the 6,200member congregation that was the largest congregation in the Presbyterian Church in the United States at that time. Not only was it an honor to be sought for such service, it was a privilege to work immediately on a management team headed by the brother-in-law of nationally known evangelist, the Rev. Dr. Billy Graham.

Our presence in Dallas lasted till my selection of retirement from that work, as of November 1, 2004, concluding after over 22 year's service there. It also covered the years in which our children accomplished their college degrees and entered into their adult lives.

Chapter 14 Graduating to Wise County, Texas as a Senior Citizen

Though my work at <u>Highland Park Presbyterian Church</u> concluded November 1, 2004, the preparation for those advancing years had us identifying and <u>purchasing a home on 10 acres</u> in <u>Aurora, Wise County</u>, Texas, in December 1999, about some 50 miles northwest of Dallas. For a couple of those years, we maintained an apartment in Dallas, having two residents. The last couple of years were entirely residing in Wise County, commuting some 100 miles daily round trip, a practice that was my delight finally to conclude!

As this is being written in 2018 it's our 19th year living here. That is the longest period we've ever lived in one location, either for Suzanne or for myself. It's important to me to add that this is the place where we have experienced the most in God's blessing in our lives and the most results in fulfilling and interesting participation in community organizations, in genealogical organizations, and in political circles. Though our blessing has been to receive Christian growth in each place we've lived and worked, this place has been where the most vigorous spiritual growth in our Christian lives has taken place.

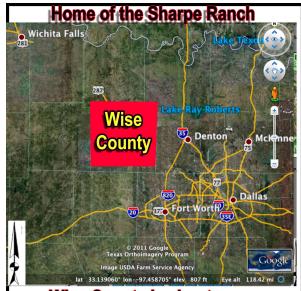
We already had connected in 1998 with the <u>Eagle Mountain International</u> <u>Church</u>, (EMIC) a non-denominational congregation situated on Eagle Mountain Lake in north Fort Worth. It was about 8 miles from our new home. Suzanne joined it in 1998, shortly after locating that church and identifying it was where we were to go. My membership delayed through the completion of my professional staff tenure at Highland Park Presbyterian Church in 2004.

EMIC is the "mother church" of the Kenneth Copeland Ministries, and EMIC is located on the 1,500 acers where KCM is headquartered. KCM is an international ministry involving an estimated budget of more than \$150 million annually.

We bought the 10 acers for our Aurora residence from Joseph (Joe) D. & Karen Meadows Warkentine, born in 1947 and 1954. They owned 20 acers, and had divided it. constructing a residence on the southern 10 acers that we purchased. They lived in their home a few more years, but then sold it in 2012 to William Wayne and Kristi Renee Conn Huckabee, who had four daughters. The Warkentine's relocated to Greeley, Colorado, from where they had originally come. The Huckabee's sold their 10 acers in 2014 to a man



who renovated it and sold it in 2015 to Jacob Lee (Jake) and Lindsey Michel Bruton, who had a toddler son and gave issue to another son by 2016.



Wise County is about 25 miles NW of Fort Worth and about 50 miles NW of Dallas This is how our home originally was configured, without the veranda on the parking lot side of the house.





This is how the home appeared after the veranda (party barn) was added on the parking lot side.



Here's a look inside the veranda where it could be cleared out for social use.

We've had several occasions to have neighborhood people, friends from our church or political events. We've had elected officials of our Wise County be here and enjoy hot dog lunches with us and our neighbors.





The immediate area around which our new home was situated was a part of a larger section of land bought out here about 1962 for Mr. Beverly Eugene (Gene) Derting and his wife, Helen Burns Derting. They had four sons, Stephen (Steve), Brian, Curtis and Kevin, ages 2 to 15. Their parcel of land was about 150 acers. Over the years, Gene sold portions of the land. The initial purchaser was Mr. Earnest <u>*Calvin*</u>Smith, in 1968. Calvin was in the construction business, so he built his own house. Later he constructed a house for his Father-in-law and wife at 802 Derting Road East, directly across the street from where our present day home is located. Robert and GayLynn Bodkin reside there currently.

Calvin constructed the home next to them at 806 Derting Road East, also across the street from our home. Our lot is some 300+ feet wide along the street. It was for Calvin's daughter, who now lives in Colorado. Subsequently, his son Clayt Weston Smith and his wife, Terese Fern Ralls resided there. They divorced, with Terese and their two sons, John and Cooper, continuing to reside there. Clayt moved to their land behind that home, which is an RV Trailer Park fronting on Clayt Drive (named after him).



Three of the four Derting sons still resided in this neighborhood. The eldest, Steven (Steve) and his wife, Janet, are at 513 Derting Road. Curtis is at 505 Derting Road, and Brian is at 311 Derting Road. Kevin and his wife, Melissa, live in Leander, Texas. Steve is a former <u>Mayor of Aurora</u> and the current <u>Chair of the Building and</u> <u>Zoning Commission</u>. His wife, Janet, is a member of the <u>City Council</u>. It has been my privilege and honor to serve

the city as Chair of the <u>Historic Preservation Commission</u>. Another couple of our friends residing on Derting Road is Robert & Melba Pitts. He is a former Mayor as well. They were high school sweethearts in the area, went different ways in life, married and each raised families. Later in life, they both were widowed and ultimately married. They are among our cherished neighbors. Ted & Trayce Stevenson are our immediate neighbors. Ted is our home and auto insurance agent! Close by for quick claims!

We recognize that God's Providence has placed us into an ideal neighborhood in which to live out our earthly lives. For exercise, Suzanne and I walk around the neighborhood on about a two-mile path, perhaps four or five times a week. We have learned the names of all the people by whose homes we walk. There are a

little over 60 of them. As we walk, we take occasion to pray for them, that they would be blessed and protected. Our experience is that often we have occasion to chat briefly with some of these wonderful neighbors. That is the glue that is part of holding a neighborhood together and makes for a good community. We even



take plastic bags with us to pick up litter along the way! You could say, "Business is picking up!"

The Aurora City Hall is just up the street, five blocks from our home. It's City Administrator/City Secretary is <u>Dr. Toni Wheeler</u>. She is a life-long resident of

Aurora, with her parents having lived here and grandparents lived here. She as a master's degree and two PhD degrees. She is very qualified to work professional many other places, but she wants to be in her "city."

One of the early positive turn of events is our getting active in the Wise County Republican Party. Due to turns of events and leaders having other directions, the occasion arose that I was elected the Chair of the <u>Wise County Republican</u> <u>Party</u>. My service was from 2000 to 2008, being elected in four two-year terms. In those years, a wave of Republican voting preferences grew in Texas and in Wise County. There are 23 local county elective offices in Wise County. The previously all Democratic Party officers began to wane with the election in 1996 of two Republican candidates. That trend grew in the election years of 1998, 2000 and 2004.

By 2004, all the local county elective offices were held by Republican officials. The front page of the *Wise County Messenger* ran the story and photograph of



me holding up the victorious arm of David Walker, candidate for the office of Sheriff. At that time, he became the youngest county sheriff among the 254 counties in Texas, being age 32.

That holding on to occupying all the local elective offices still is in effect in 2018 as this is being written. Part of that success and growth gave me opportunities to become known in our new-found home county, to be an invited speaker at various venues, and to become a writer of articles and letters to the editor that were published in the two major newspapers in Wise County. the Wise County Messenger and the Bridgeport Index.

Not only did that participation enable both Suzanne and me to be elected regularly as Delegates from Wise County to <u>the Republican Party of</u> Texas State Conventions every two years. With our previous participation in Dallas County, both of us have been privileged to serve as Delegates to that State Convention every two years since 1988, except for one time when we were on a trip in Europe and another time when I was in surgery! Our representative service in 2018 made our 14th time to be elected Delegates. In 2012, it was my honor to be elected as an Alternate Delegate to the <u>National Republican Party</u> Convention In Tampa, Florida. Since Wise County had been predominately Republican a couple of decades, it was stated that I was the first people elected to a Republican National Convention who came from Wise County!

Being a supporter of the idea of term limits, as well as seeing to it that young blood in leadership in any organization be given the opportunities to serve, my decision was to step down form the county chair positon in 2008. In 2007, my sights were cast upon a 33-year old lawyer in Wise County who become active in our Wise County Republican Party. He'd served time in the Wise County District



Attorney's office, and then had entered private practice. My private proposal to him was to allow me to mentor him for a year about how to be a county political party chair, with the understanding that my intention was not to run for reelection in 2008. If he did that, he probably would be the most qualified county chair candidate in the Party Primary Election, even though any qualified voter was free to file as a candidate. He agreed, and accomplished a success tenure for our local people and party. Here's a <u>Wise County Messenger</u> article about that.

A decade later, he has stepped down, having brought along a young man, Eric Marney, to be our new Wise County Republican Party Chair in 2018. Eric has been a political working partner with me several years. He and his family are members of the church where Suzanne and I worship, Eagle Mountain International Church. The photo here shows Eric at one of our Wise County Conventions, following a Party Primary Election, along with Wise Republican Women's Vice President, Bettye Parker and me. Some of the documents developed over the years have been for educating the public about government, how political circles move and how to become involved in the governance of your city, county, state or national government. One document was created specifically for one of our teenage granddaughters after she had occasion to visit a political event and to meet several elected officials. <u>Here it is</u>. A more comprehensive 11-chapter course on government and political involvement was developed for schools to use, for home school venues or for anyone wanting to learn more about these matters. <u>Here it is</u>.



In 2008, the Texas Federation of **Republican Women conducted** a training seminar at our Wise County Courthouse. It was led by Toni Dashiell, who at the time was President of the Texas Federation of Republican Women. One of the things she sought to motivate we "students" was to use Facebook as a networking tool. Up to that time, I had steered away from joining Facebook. So, she convinced me to start an account. So, the Dwight Albert **Sharpe Facebook account was** started a decade ago (at this writing).

It did prove to be a wonder took

for me to make and to maintain connections from loved ones, from friends and from people of distant acquaintance with whom continued connection had not been maintained. Today (2018), <u>there are over 2,800 friends connected</u> with me.

In addition, it has been an easy place to lodge photographs of personal, family, community activities and of political activities. Today, there are over <u>300 photo</u> <u>albums</u> in my Facebook account, which may contain over 3,000 photographs. Browsing through it can enable one to see the variety of activities we've enjoyed.

Today, Toni is on the National Republican Party Committee (RNC). There are one committeeman and one committeewoman, elected at Republican State Conventions in Presidential Election years who comprise the 100 members of the NRC. Here is how you can see <u>who serves on the NRC</u> from your state.

My website has a <u>Political Page</u> posted with photographs and brief narratives covering our political activities and experiences since living in Wise County. It's

a lot of material, and takes a while to scroll down through it. However, it is a comprehensive illustration of what we've been doing in the political realms.



Our current <u>Sheriff, Lane Akin</u>, here is being congratulated by Charlie Huff (a member of our home church, EMIC) as his 2016 first time Sheriff election has been confirmed.

Lane has an impressive career resume serving Texas Ranger Service, Highway Patrol, Law Enforcement at D/FW Airport, and various other security and law enforcement roles.

One of our officers with whom Suzanne and I have grown near and dear is our Texas Congressional District #12

Committeewoman, <u>Kay Granger</u>. Kay formerly served as Mayor of Fort Worth. She currently is Vice Chair of the House Republican Conference. Some of her <u>active pursuits are in this website</u>.

Kay serves on the House <u>Committee on</u> <u>Appropriations</u>, which is a significant budget-building role of the Congress. She Chair's that Committee's <u>Subcommittee on</u> <u>Defense</u>. She also serves on the <u>Energy &</u> <u>Water Development and Related Agencies</u> SubCommittee, as well as on the <u>State</u>, <u>Foreign Operations and Related</u> <u>Programs</u>.





Kay has been a staunch advocate in supporting our government's favorable diplomatic relationships with the nation of Israel, a cause near and dear to our hearts. Suzanne and I are members of <u>Christians United For Israe</u>I, which is a political advocacy group that lobbies Congress to relate well to Israel (CUFI). Suzanne and I have been a part of <u>CUFI'</u>s visit on Capitol Hill to Kay's office, along with the Senior Pastors of our Church George & Terri Pearsons at EMIC. Here we are on one of those visits.

Kay's roles on military oriented Congressional assignments enabled her to accomplish achieving the naming of one of the Littoral Combat Ships after Fort Worth. The USS Fort Worth was Christened December 4, 2010 at the Lockheed Martin facilities on the Menominee River in Mariette, Wisconsin. It was my pleasure that Suzanne and I, along with representatives of the Nimitz Squadron of the Texas Navy, to be present for that Christening. <u>Here is a copy of the</u> <u>article</u> published by our *Wise County Messenger*.

On August 6, 2012, there was the ceremony in Fort Worth called the Weighing of the Anchor. <u>Here is the article</u> published by our *Wise County Messenger*.

The Dedication and the formal launching of the USS Fort Worth into military service was on September 22, 2012. Again, Suzanne and I were privileged to be present for this event. <u>Here is the article published by our *Wise County Messenger*</u>.

Our interest in the CUFI organization, supporting relations with Israel, goes back to the summer of 2006, the year it first generated its Washington Summit conference. That's what became an annual conference of people gathering to hear outstanding speakers, etc. We attended the 2007 Summit and have attended a total of about nine of them over the years. The speakers were people such as Israeli Prime Ministry Benjamin Netanyahu, U.S. Vice President Michael Pence, etc. Their conferees run about five or six thousand.

In 2012, we had an interesting thing happen. First, let's go back to when we lived in St. Louis, 1972-1982. Our daughter, Tiffany, developed a friend in her junior high age school classroom. Michelle Greer was her name. Over the years, our family has kept in touch with her through a number of

Our life in Wise County was enhanced for us when our son-in-law, daughter and our five grandchildren moved in April 2007 to reside less than three miles from us. That has been such a blessing to us to be so close to this part of our family.

==

Chapter 15 My Spiritual Journeys

My great privilege was to be born into a family whose members already knew God and were followers of Jesus Christ. That gave me a running start toward growing into what God wanted in my life.

With my father being a Presbyterian pastor



for over 40 years, I never was left

without knowledge of and hearing about Jesus Christ and the Providence that God had in our lives. <u>My mother</u> was a Godly woman who modeled the Proverbs 31 women to me in her daily living.

l cannot remember not knowing that we were supposed

to believe that God created the universe, all things in and on the earth, and all human kind. We were given what was called free will, which I understood meant we could decide to obey principles of God or not. However, we would be blessed or penalized, depending on our choices. We were to believe that Jesus was a man born of woman, yet supernaturally from God, and that Jesus was God incarnate. Never



did I doubt in my mind that eternal privilege (going to heaven) was based on whether I believed that Jesus was Deity.

Now, I am the first to confess that my natural sinful nature had its times at pulling me down, and there was my share of backsliding. My life did not honor God as consistently as my upbringing in a Godly family strove to produce. However, I do not recall that my lips ever let pass any words that questioned the existence of God, or that Jesus Christ was His Son, sent to save me, and all humankind who would receive Him. Even in my university days, when I was around the first strong currents of non-Christian influence, I never abandoned that belief. I just gave in to retreat and had little to do with those advocating non-belief, and I did not darken the doors of many churches in my five years at higher education.



I remember joining our church, <u>Trinity</u> <u>Presbyterian Church in Houston, Texas</u>, by making a commitment to Jesus Christ at about 10:00 AM on Palm Sunday, March 18, 1951, at the age of 12. My father propounded the questions that required me to profess belief in the Lordship and Deity of Jesus Christ. It was real to me, to the extent that could understand at that tender age.

Though I did not understand enough about what I was doing when Suzanne and I were married, I now know that our paths crossing and uniting into marriage was foreordained, and is the best human thing



that has happened to me. Her musical talents, her Christian commitment and participation in the Chancel Choir at <u>Canal Street</u> <u>Presbyterian Church</u> in New Orleans, Louisiana, the city in which we met, led us into active participation. Our marriage was in that church, conducted 105 days after our meeting, by my Presbyterian father, coming over from Texas, and the Pastor of CSPC, the <u>Rev. Dr. Robert</u> <u>A. Pitman</u>, a Godly minister whose friendship even today we cherish and continue, as he now is in his eighties, travels the world for Christian missions and resides in California.



We even recently (in 2017) had occasion for a reunion with Dr. Pitman, with his conducting a seminar, even at his current age of 88! What a joy to maintain Christian fellowship with a man over 54 plus years!

We lived in New Orleans 1962-1972, and all three of our Presbyterian children (Taylor, Tiffany & Todd) were born in a Jewish hospital (<u>Touro Infirmary</u>), delivered by our dear friend, Dr. Sustendahl, a Roman Catholic doctor. Two of those children married and had families. Tiffany married Steve Westmoreland, and they had five children: Katherine, Jack, twins Lily & Sarah, and Sam. Todd married Carrie Maxwell, and they had Luke and Brooke.

During a week of spiritual renewal at our church, a contingent of lay Christians came from across the South to share their testimonies. One couple was from Lubbock, Texas, Jack and Shelly Hall. a Methodist Church couple, who'd come to know my



Presbyterian Pastor brother-in-law, the Rev. Dr. Andrew A. Jumper. It was in a meeting in our home after one of the services that we were with them and my brother-in-law, who was their friend, that they taught us more about the Holy Spirit, and they prayed for our filling, with speaking in tongues. That was in October 1965. Much of our spiritual growth took place as Suzanne and I became the adult volunteer ministers for the church's ministry to high school age students. Though we felt our recruitment was because someone thought we were spiritually wise, in retrospect, we have seen how we just were ripe for beginning to learn what marvelous things God had in our lives, as experienced through what we did and through the kids in the group.



We managed to keep up over the years with one of the high school young ladies, Mary Alice Arseneaux. We rediscovered her and became friends with her sometime around 2010 or after on Facebook. She, of course, was married, with children! Her Facebook address uses her nick name and her married surname: Pinky Idiaquez.

In March 2017, we were contacted by another of the young guys in that ministry, Mr. Douglas Boylan! He found my website on the



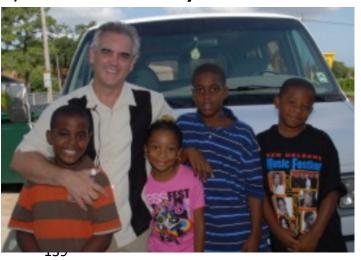
Internet, and sent an e-mail. He had married his girl-friend in our youth group, Sandi Waddell in 1969. They now live in Birmingham, Alabama, they'd had five children and today, have 12 grandchildren! He said that she



and he recently had recalled their good experiences when we all were together in New Orleans, and resolved to try to find us. What a

blessing when we can see such spiritual friends come together like this!

My career employment had been in the computer industry following



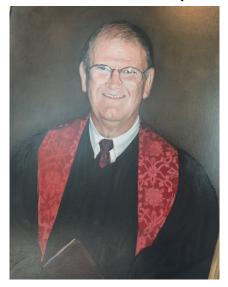
graduation from college in 1962, but in 1969, I chose to leave that labor. In 1970, my professional life in administration and non-profit organization began at <u>Trinity Christian Community</u> in New Orleans, a ministry originated out of Canal Street Presbyterian Church and through the vision of the <u>Rev. Mr. William Brown</u>. This beginning was in 1967. This was in an old part of New Orleans known as the <u>Irish Channel</u>.

As I write this testimony today in 2017, TCC is celebrating its 50th year in ministry! Bill has graduated to heaven, but his eldest son, Kevin Brown, is directing the ministry and is on the faculty of Louisiana State University – New Orleans. Here is Kevin and some of the kids in the ministry circa 2016.



TCC was a ministry to the down-and-out on the streets of what was known as the Irish Channel. We bought a 101-year old home down there with another couple, <u>Dr. & Mrs. Joseph (Charlotte) Snead</u>, making it into a duplex in 1967. We knew them from church. Joe was a Resident at <u>Charity Hospital</u> at the time. The people with whom we worked were mostly African American teenagers & families, and Anglo adult people often associated with the ways of crime and interfaced regularly with the criminal justice system. There were five bars that never closed (24 hours/day) within a block of our house,

and during the five years we resided there, we witnessed five instances of handgun fire. The spiritual growth of our family took off, as the challenges of a crime-torn inner city in New Orleans where we lived tested us in many ways.



We continued to learn more of what God had for us and continue even today learning about what He has for us. We have grown over the years, moving from New Orleans to Saint Louis 1972-82, being members of the <u>Central Presbyterian Church</u> there. My work was as Executive Director of the Covenant Fellowship of Presbyterians. Then, we were called to Dallas. These years were working administratively for Christian organizations, the last 22 years being a large church (about 6,500 members) in Dallas, <u>Highland Park Presbyterian</u> as Executive Administrator to the Senior Pastor. My recruitment and my immediate supervisor for 20 of those years was by <u>Dr. B. Clayton Bell</u>, a brother-in-law of evangelist <u>Billy Graham</u>, a circumstance that afforded many memorable occasions.



My retirement has been from employment, but not from work! It seems I work full time. We live in Aurora, Wise County, Texas and are members of Eagle Mountain International

<u>Churc</u>h,

where Love is King and we continue to grow spiritually. We talk of our church as the Revival Center of the World! Part

of the sense of God's calling in our lives have been the prompting to be active in the community life. Our senior pastors are George and Terri Pearsons, ably assisted by <u>10 other associate pastors</u>. Our spiritual growth there has been sustained greatly since our first visit in 1998.



As a Christian man and woman, each of us has served in our civic structures. As mentioned, we've been frequently delegates from Wise County to the Texas Republican State Convention, and one to the National one for me. We also have served in County and Precinct Conventions as delegates and elected officers. Service on actual government entities have been my service as Chair of the City of Aurora (TX) Historical Preservation Commission; Chair of the Wise County Ballot Board (citizens who oversee the Wise County Elections Office's conduction of all public elections), I've served two three-year terms on a Texas State Professional Licensing Board, and currently am a member of the Selective Service System North Texas Draft Board.

Being Christians serving in political circles involves seven major areas that function in our nation. Having taken our daughter and a couple of her daughters to a local political event where they met many elected officials, the girl's inquiry later about who were all those officials and how did they relate to them resulted in a document I developed to use in teaching. Here is the document on <u>government in the United States</u>. This is what a Christian person needs to understand to serve faithfully and effectively in our civic lives. A more comprehensive <u>11-chapter course is available here</u>.

Suzanne and I cherish our mornings together when we read and pray for direction in each day. In 1986, we began reading through the entire Bible every year, and continue to do so today. In 2018, we are on our 33rd time to read out loud to each other the entire Bible! We keep learning new things as God blesses us with renewed revelation. We encourage all Christians to be disciplined in regular, daily use of God's Word, the Bible.

God's provision in our lives has been so abundant in blessing that it defies being able to express the true scope of these Divine experiences. Besides the many occasions of learning and spiritual growth, we are confident that our early commitment in our marriage was the practice of the Biblical standard of tithing. For all the years of our marriage, since 1962, our giving to the church where we worshipped and to over and above causes that motivated our hearts has exceeded the Bible standard of 10%. Going along with that commitment included seeking to be out of debt.

Bearing debts, primarily home mortgage and automobile payments, existed in our lives up through the 1990s. It is a privilege and blessing to say that we have been entirely out of debt all this current century! For our retirement home of 10 acres of country land, we paid cash at the end of 1999. Since then, we've had occasion to purchase four new cars, each for cash (owning two at a time). Our credit cards are automatically paid entirely each month. We have had no occasion to delay payment of any financial obligation. We attribute all that possibility to God's grace in our lives and to our knowing the value of the Biblical principle of tithing. We have been out of debt all of this century!

These principles operate even when financial circumstances are not excessive. Part of our financial good results have had to do with appropriate savings accumulated over our working careers. Our ordinary income is centered on the Social Security pension, along with an approximate equal amount of pension from being employed on a church staff. Of course, occasional special blessings are received, but they are not an ordinary part of our living. However, to highlight how effective following God's principles, we can see that the total giving made in 2016 was over 25% of our income! That is a blessing! And, no debts! Our giving all of our retirement years has hovered around 20%.

We have dedicated our three children and their loved ones to God's graces, and we are confident of His hand in each of their lives. We have lived what we understood was God's directions in our lives, and are blessed at receiving His forgiveness for all shortcomings that have appeared in our lives. To God be the Glory!

Chapter 16 My Political Journeys



My endeavor of life seeks roles to serve in the political arena of life, based upon my Christian faith's responsibilities. Isiah 33:22 exhorts, "For the Lord is our judge, our lawgiver and our king." We derive the three parts of our American government from this verse. The judge is our courts, the lawgiver is our Congress and Legislatures, and the king is our President, Governor, Mayor,

etc. Ecclesiastes 10:20 exhorts us not to make light of the king (criticize the political leader), but rather to pray for them, regardless of what opinion we might have of a political leader.

I am Dwight Albert Sharpe is a fifth-generation Texan, born 1939 in Ballinger, Runnels County, Texas. My family has been in Texas since 1841. I have lived in Texas all my life, except for 20 years in Louisiana (1962-72) and Missouri (1972-82).

My Republican connections have been in and around me all my life. On my first birthday, June 24, 1940, the Republican National Convention, in Cleveland, Ohio, approved a plank in its platform calling for racial integration of the armed forces: "Discrimination in the civil service, the army, navy, and all other branches of the Government must cease." For the next eight years, Democrat Party presidents Franklin Delano Roosevelt (*a cousin*) and Harry S. Truman refused that position. Not until 1948 did President Truman finally comply with the Republicans' repeated demands for racial justice.

Source: Michael Zak, "Back to the Basics for the Republican Party."

That 1940 Republican National Convention took place at the Public Auditorium of Cleveland, Ohio, which was just less than 50 miles from the home of my Sharpe family east of Cleveland, located in Portage County, city of Ravenna on the day of my birth. That fact is one of numerous political elements that have related me to the ideas of the Republican Party.

My service is on or has been on all four levels of government. Appointment was made in September 2012 to the <u>Selective Service Board</u> in North Texas, a Federal agency. I was an <u>Official of the State of Texas</u>, having been appointed by the Governor and confirmed by the Texas Senate to serve, for two 3-year terms, on one of the <u>State professional licensing boards</u>. My county official responsibility has been as Chairman of the <u>Wise County Ballot Board</u>, which oversees elections managed by our Wise County Elections Administration. I am a city official serving as Chair of the Historical Commission of the <u>City of Aurora</u>, my city of resident in Wise County. These positions mostly are unpaid voluntary activities. The county elections responsibilities pay election clerk rates for just a few hours each election.

Political service for the <u>Republican Party of Texas</u> dates back to 1984 where in <u>Dallas County</u> I served as a Precinct Chairman and Election Judge in <u>University Park</u>, and later in North Dallas. Both Suzanne and I have been elected delegates to the <u>Texas State Republican Party Convention</u> every evennumbered year since 1988, except for 1990, when we were in Europe and in 2010 when I was in surgery.

Earlier Republican political assignments began in Saint Louis County, Missouri as an Election Judge (beginning in 1974), and as <u>Hadley Township Convention</u> <u>Chairman</u>. I was elected a delegate to the 1978 and 1980 <u>Missouri State</u> <u>Republican Conventions</u>, representing St. Louis County. In 1966, while a resident of New Orleans, Orleans Parish, Louisiana, the local voting precinct poll was in the automobile garage of our home. In 1999, Mr. & Mrs. Sharpe moved to <u>Aurora, Wise County</u>, Texas. In 2000, I was elected Chairman of the <u>Wise County Republican Party</u>, and again in 2002, 2004 and in 2006. In 2008, I stepped down to encourage new and younger leadership in the local party, which was a successful transition.

Service has been as Delegation Chairman for Wise County at the State Republican Conventions and Chairman or other leadership positions in the Convention State Senate Caucus meetings, 2000 - 2012.

At the Republican State Convention June 7-9, 2012 in Fort Worth, Texas, it was an honor to be elected an Alternate Delegate from Congressional District #12 to represent Texas at the Republican National Convention in Tampa, Florida. This was the first time anyone ever was elected from Wise County to be represented at a National Republican Convention. I was present at that Convention to see the unveiling of the Clint Eastwood famous Empty Chair skit! <u>Clint Eastwood is my 7th cousin, 3 times removed</u>, just for the political Theory of Relativity!

My political motivation is that our nation would be returned to that phrase in the <u>Declaration of Independence</u>, *We hold these truths to be self-evident, that all men are created equal, that they are endowed by their Creator with certain unalienable Rights, that among these are Life, Liberty and the pursuit of Happiness*. Our founders recognized that we need to acknowledge our Creator. The attempts of modernists in the past century have tried to steer us into a *secular society.* It is one that accomplishes good and governing without the presence of God. It has been a moral failure.

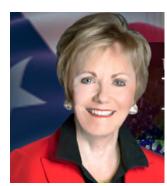
The primary composer of the Declaration of Independence was Thomas Jefferson, who was destined to become the third President of the United States. <u>He is related to our family</u> by being the 9th cousin, twice removed of Edward Carleton, the husband of Ellen Newton, the stepdaughter of my 6th great grand uncle, Danette Abney (born about 1712). Our ancestor in common is Eystein Glumra Ivarsson and his wife, Aseda Rognvaldsdatter. They are President Jefferson's 27th great grandparents, whereas they are <u>my 32nd great grandparents</u>.

The Article I of the <u>Constitution</u> states, *Congress shall make no law respecting an establishment of religion, or prohibiting the free exercise thereof; or*

abridging the freedom of speech, or of the press. Everyone knows Congress cannot establish a religion, but that Amendment often is not read completely. Notice that Congress **may not prohibit the free exercise of religion**. My understanding is that means the laws cannot dictate that public expression of prayer, for example, be removed from the public arena, such as high school football games, etc.



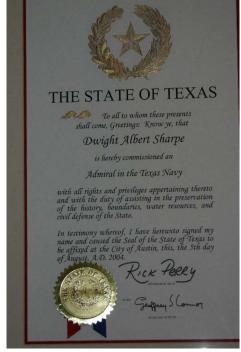
James Madison, who later became President of the United States, took copious notes of the debates Constitutional Convention, and had much to do with fashioning the wording of the Constitution. Madison's important contribution to the overall creation of the Constitution earned him the nickname "Father of the Constitution" later in life. He is the <u>3rd cousin, seven times removed</u> to me. Madison also is the <u>3rd cousin, seven times removed</u> to Steve Westmoreland, my son-in-law.



Former Fort Worth Mayor Kay Granger now is our multiterm <u>Congressional Representative</u>. She has hosted Suzanne and me, with other friends, at her offices in Washington, D.C. several times over the years. We often are there to advocate political items, such as Congress' favorable treatment of the nation of Israel.

of

Texas Governor Rick Perry commissioned me in 2004 as an. Texas Admirals often affiliate with the <u>Texas Navy Association</u>, the historical educational organization promoting knowledge about the Texas Navy of the Republic of Texas 1836-1845, as well as other Texas Navy Squadrons. As of 2017, <u>Rick Perry is the Secretary</u>





<u>Energy</u> in the Cabinet of the Executive Branch of the United States.

During one of the annual Texas Navy Day official state recognitions (3rd Saturdays in September), the then Texas Land <u>Commissioner</u>, <u>Jerry</u> <u>Patterson</u>, gave leadership for our services. After Jerry retired from public office, he was elected President and Chairman of the Board of the Texas Navy Association, of which I am a member.

As their grandchildren broach their teenage years, the Sharpe's

have begun to take one or two of the older ones to occasional political events. This affords the opportunity for them to learn something of our government structures and political workings, being personally introduced to elected officials, etc. After attending an annual fund raiser for our Wise County Republican Party in early 2017, taking our daughter and her twin 14-year old daughters, there was a



question raised by one of them, about which Tiffany, our daughter, passed on to me. The girls wondered just who were all those elected officials, what do they do, how do they relate to each other and to us! A request was made that I sit down to explain all of that.

The result was my composition of a 27-page document, structuring the political world into seven sections of understanding and functions. It's highly personalized to our situation, but the document is usable for most anyone to use in explaining government to those who need understanding. <u>Here it is!</u>

I am a 1957 graduate of <u>Woodrow Wilson High School</u> in Dallas, Texas; he attended <u>Austin College</u> in Sherman, Texas 1957-1959 and is a 1962 BBA graduate of the <u>University of Texas at Austin</u>. The Ex-Students Association, the University of Texas Alumni organization has over 90,000 Life Members as of 2017. I am member #742. In 2016, he learned from their office that only 214 Life Members were still alive who joined prior to his 1963 joining.

He and his wife, Suzanne, raised two sons and a daughter. Their children are third generation graduates from the University of Texas in the family, both of their Sharpe grandparents having graduated in 1925 and in 1926. They enjoy seven grandchildren among their children, 24 great nieces and nephews and three great, great nephews (who are eighth generation Texans).

Mr. and Mrs. Sharpe are members of <u>Eagle Mountain International Church</u> in Fort Worth. We reside on 10 acres in <u>Aurora, Wise County, Texas</u>. My hobby is the pursuit of political events and genealogical history.

Chapter 17 My Genealogical Journeys

Dwight Albert Sharpe is a fifth-generation Texan, born 1939 in Ballinger, Runnels County, Texas. My great, great grandfather, Ohio born <u>Judge Felix Benedict Dixon</u>, settled in <u>San Augustine County</u> in 1841, having taken a citizenship oath to the Republic of Texas in order to purchase several hundred acres of land.

I am a sixth-generation descendant of an American Revolution military officer, New York State Militia <u>Lt. George P. Sharp</u>, his third great grandfather.



In this photograph, I'm 75 years old in April of 2016. All three of our children, the spouses two of them have, and our seven grandchildren.

The Sharpe surname derives from the <u>German</u> <u>Palatines</u> who immigrated for English investors in 1710 to what became

New York State. They were a group of 3,000 with indentured servant contracts to work along the Hudson River, north of Manhattan Island, around what became <u>Germantown</u>, New York. Lt. Sharp above is a grandson of one of those 3,000 German immigrants.

My presence in America is as a tenth-generation American, whose seventh great grandfather, <u>Gov. William Bradford</u>, arriving on the Mayflower as a passenger in 1620, and who reputedly had much to do with compiling the Mayflower Compact. Though self-taught, for the most part, he did have knowledge of six languages, and was among the most literate of the Mayflower passengers.

My genealogy has made me a qualified member of the lineage societies of the <u>Sons of the Republic of Texas</u> and the <u>Sons of the</u> <u>American Revolution</u>. The certification of my connection with Judge Felix Benedict Dixon was awarded by the Sons of the Republic of Texas on October 27, 2005, SRT #7671. The certification of my connection with Lt. George Sharpe was awarded by the Sons of the American Revolution on October 26, 1988, National Member Number 131981 (State of Texas Number 6157).

I am a dues-paying member of more than a dozen <u>genealogical</u>, <u>community and historical interest organizations</u>.

Texas Governor Rick Perry, now the U.S. Secretary of the Department of Energy, commissioned me as an <u>Admiral in the Texas</u> <u>Navy</u>. Texas Admirals affiliate with the <u>Texas Navy Association</u>, the historical educational organization promoting knowledge about the Texas Navy of the Republic of Texas 1836-1845.

It has been my privilege to serve as an <u>Official of the State of Texas</u>, having been appointed by the Governor and confirmed by the Texas Senate to serve on one of the <u>State professional licensing boards</u>. A current duty is as Chairman of the Wise County Ballot Board, which oversees elections. Another duty is serving on the <u>Historical</u> <u>Preservations Commission</u> of the <u>City of Aurora</u>, where we reside in <u>Wise County, Texas</u>.

I am a 1957 graduate of <u>Woodrow Wilson High School</u> in Dallas, TX; attended <u>Austin College</u> in Sherman, TX 1957-1959 and am a 1962 BBA graduate of the <u>University of Texas at Austin</u>.

My wife, Suzanne, and I raised two sons and a daughter. We enjoy seven grandchildren among their children, 24 great nieces and nephews and three great, great nephews (who are eighth generation Texans) and one great, great niece. One son and our daughter's family of five children, reside in North Texas. Another son and two children lived in Texas till 2012, but now reside in Montana.

We are members of <u>Eagle Mountain International Church</u> in Fort Worth. We reside on 10 acres in <u>Aurora, Wise County, Texas</u>.

Chapter 18 - My Journalistic Endeavors



My newspaper publication presence did not begin till the printing of a Letter to the Editor, October 10, 1994 in the Dallas Morning News. The editors liked my comments well enough to have its art staff create a cartoon image to accompany my letter!

The concern expressed in my letter was the fact that our national debt had arisen to about \$4 Trillion! As this is being written in 2017, the national debt is about \$20 Trillion!

Here is a live-time <u>U.S. Debt Clock</u> that shows many aspects of income, debt and government expenses. It's a bit frightening!

Here are articles l've written or articles about me.

As we became involved in life in our North Texas home and community, various occasions began to arise that gave me opportunities to compose materials the local newspapers wanted to publish. Most of these were in the *Wise*

County Messenger (Decatur, Texas) and in the *Bridgeport Index* (Bridgeport, Texas). Some appeared in the near-by *Fort Worth Star Telegram*. In this chapter, the articles will be sequenced by date. Click on the date to see the digital copy.

December 29, 2004 The Wise County Messenger Here's the front page of the newspaper December 30, 2004

This is the story, not by me, but about a winning sheriff and me. David Walker ran against a field of 5 candidates and won without a runoff! At that time in the election night process, he still was reluctant to claim victory, I, as Chairman of the Wise County Republican Party, raised his arm in victory, proclaiming him as the new sheriff in town, actually, at the time, he was the YOUNGEST SHERIFF in Texas (age 32)! This story was proclaimed by the *Wise County Messenger* as the Big Story of the Year!

December 10, 2010, the Wise County Messenger (large type version) December 16, 2010, the Wise County Messenger

The USS Fort Worth was Christened in Wisconsin in December 6, 2010. This is the account of the Fort Worth area leaders who attended this significant event.

April 28, 2012, the *Bridgeport Index*:

This is an article discussing how one should go about deciding what political causes you should support, either financially or by working/endorsing.

August 15, 2012, the Wise County Messenger

This article was about the dedication ceremony August 6, 2012 in the city of Fort Worth of the USS Fort Worth's anchor.

September 14, 2013 the Wise County Messenger

This is the article about my stopping down from leadership as elected Chairman of the Republican Party for eight years, and presently in this article, Directory of Communications for the past five years, due to health matters.

March 10, 2016 Fort Worth Star Telegram

This is an article about why Congress adopted March 14th as National Pi Day!

<u>September 26, 2012 the Wise County Messenger</u> (Large type copy of article for easier readability)

This is the Commissioning of the USS Fort Worth on Saturday, September 22, 2012 in Galveston, Texas. Hundreds of citizens from the Fort Worth area attended.

Wednesday, April 19, 2017 The Wise County Messenger

This article is about the community event sponsored by the USS Fort Worth Support Committee to celebrate the recognition of the first female ship captain for the USS Fort Worth.

<u>May 10, 2017 The Wise County Messenger</u> (Here's a larger type copy for easier reading) Here's the May 4, 2017 article in the Bridgeport Index

These are the articles about the National Day of Prayer in Decatur, Texas.

May 10, 2017 The Wise County Messenger (large print version)

This is an article about the annual Joe T. Garcia's support event in Fort Worth for our Congressional Representative, Kay Granger, former Mayor of Fort Worth.

August 10, 2017 The Bridgeport Index.

A very good article was published by Keith Bridwell, the on the subject of the effects in North Texas of a large salt sea present in pre-historic times. It was so well done that we were moved to send a letter to the editor to compliment him. In turn, the Bridgeport Index returned the honor by publishing my letter as a Letter to the Editor. It's an example of showing how it's positive to make complimentary remarks to people in the public domain when they are deserved.

October 14, 2017, The Wise County Messenger

An occasion to give praise to one of the talented staff people on this newspaper, Mr. Joe Duty.

Chapter 19 Nicholas Philip Trist – U S Diplomat of Interesting Distinction

Nicholas Philip Trist is perhaps one of the most obscure and eccentric federal officeholders. He was born in 1800 in Alexandria, Virginia, and died there in 1874.

He even earned vastly critical remarks from a U.S. President, even being fired from the State Department. Yet he is a source of such unusual accomplishment as to be a significant contributor in what is known as "<u>America's Manifest</u> <u>Destiny</u>."

Just to whet your appetite about Mr. Trist, later in this chapter, you will see why the United States includes today what we know of as the State of California, acquired because of the effort



California, acquired because of the efforts of Mr. Trist!

The explanation for including him in my autobiography is that Nicholas is my 28th cousin, three times removed! The relationship: Dwight Albert Sharpe to Nicholas Philip Trist also may be described as him being the 9th cousin, four times removed of the husband of the stepdaughter of my 6th great grand uncle, Dannett Abney.

Our ancestor in common goes back to a Norwegian Viking, Eystein Glumra Ivarsson, born in 788 AD, and his wife, Aseda Rognvaldsdatter, born about 804 AD. They are my <u>32nd great grandparents</u>. To Nicholas Trist, Eystein Glumra Ivarsson is the <u>7th great grandfather of husband of 19th great</u> <u>grandmother of Virginia Jefferson Randolph</u>, the wife of Nicholas Philip Trist. Virginia also is the granddaughter of <u>U.S. President Thomas Jefferson</u>. President Thomas Jefferson's <u>relationship to me is</u> as him being the 9th cousin, 2 times removed of the husband of the stepdaughter of my 6th great grand uncle, Danette Abney (born 1712).

So, these charts document the *Theory of Relativity* of Nicholas Philip Trist to me and as a part of our family. Our family reflects his reputation, both good and bad! At this point, I want to commend a recently published American history book, a New York Times Bestselling effort of Michael S. Medved, "The

American Miracle ... Divine Providence in the Rise of

the Republic," published 2016 by Crown Forum, an imprint of the Crown Publishing Group, a division of Penguin Random House LLC, New York

(www.crownforum.com). Most of the material used in my Chapter 19 autobiography about Nicholas Trist is based on Mr. Medved's research and report in his book Chapter 9 (pages 232 – 263). Mr. Michael Medved was born and raised in the Jewish faith. This book is his effort to remind America's reading public of the



important aspect of spiritual motivation in and among the founders of this nation and their leaders. Though he is a Jewish man in his faith, he does a good job at illustrating positive aspects of Christian faith being real and active in America. Michael Medved is an American radio show host, author, political commentator, and film critic. His Seattle-based nationally syndicated talk show, The Michael Medved Show, airs throughout the U.S. on Salem Radio Network. I recommend that all lovers of American History, especially those who value spirituality, should devour this book!



Nicholas Philip Trist was born January 2, 1800 in Charlottesville, Virginia. Nicholas Philip Trist (June 2, 1800 – February 11, 1874) was born in Charlottesville, Virginia and was the grandson of James Madison's former Philadelphia landlady. Ultimately, Trist was to enjoy intimate relationships with five American Presidents, and served terms as a principal and to aide to three of them.

The beginning of these stories about Nicholas Philip Trist early on as a young boy. His grandmother was

the landlady and operator of an elegant boarding house in Philadelphia. Trist's early friendship began with Thomas Jefferson lodged there when he was in Philadelphia for sessions of the Continental Congress. Another future U.S. President also befriended Trist when he lodged at the boarding house during <u>the Constitutional Convention</u>, James Madison. Trist ran around the serving areas of the boarding house, serving its clientele, which is how these to famous men came to view Trist favorably.

Madison became the fourth President of the United States. He served from 1809 to 1817. He is the 32nd cousin, once removed to me. Madison is the

3rd cousin, seven times removed to my son-in-law, Steve Westmoreland. He is the 13th cousin, five times removed to President George Washington. He is the 15th cousin, three times removed to President Thomas Jefferson. James Madison is the third cousin, once removed, to President Zachary Taylor. James Madison's relationship to President Zachary Taylor is extended in that President Taylor is the father-in-law of President Jefferson Davis of the Confederate States of America, the uncle of the wife of the brother-inlaw of my great grandmother, Susanah Elizabeth Davis Abney of Lufkin, San Angelina County, Texas.

Trist attended West Point and studied law under <u>Thomas Jefferson</u>, whose granddaughter (<u>Virginia Jefferson Randolph</u>, 1818–1875) he married. He was also private secretary to <u>U.S President Andrew Jackson</u>, whom he greatly admired. Trist served as a conduit for James Madison to President Jackson.

Trist was appointed U.S. consul in Havana, Cuba by President Jackson. Shortly after arriving there in 1833, Trist invested in a sugar plantation deal that went bad. He made no secret of his pro-slavery views. According to members of a British commission sent to Cuba to investigate violations of the treaty ending the African slave trade, Trist became corruptly involved in the creation of false documents designed to mask illegal sales of Africans into bondage.

For a time, Trist also served as the consul in Cuba for Portugal, another country whose nationals were active in the illegal slave trade. Meanwhile, Trist became very unpopular with New England ship captains who believed he was more interested in maintaining good relations with Cuban officials than in defending their interests. Captains and merchants pressed members of Congress for Trist's removal. In late 1838 or early 1839, the British commissioner Dr. <u>Richard Robert Madden wro</u>te U.S. abolitionists about Trist's misuse of his post to promote slaving and earn fees from the fraudulent document schemes.



A pamphlet detailing Madden's charges was

published shortly before the beginning of the sensational Amistad affair,

when Africans just sold into slavery in Cuba managed to seize control of the schooner in which they were being transported from Havana to provincial plantations. Madden traveled to the United States where he gave expert testimony in the trial of the Amistad Africans, explaining how false documents were used to make it appear that Africans were Cuban-born slaves. This exposure of the activities of the U.S. consul general, coupled with the angry complaints of ship captains, caused a Congressional investigation and eventual recall of Trist. (Neither Trist nor Madden is depicted in the film Amistad directed by Steven Spielberg, although there are brief Cuba scenes that suggest how the illegal slave trade was carried on there.)

During the <u>Mexican-American War</u>, President James K. Polk sent Trist to negotiate with the Government of Mexico. He was ordered to arrange an armistice with Mexico for up to \$30 million U.S. dollars, depending on whether he could obtain <u>Baja California</u> and additional southern territory along with the already planned acquisitions of Alta California, the Nueces Strip, and New Mexico. If he could not obtain Baja California and additional territory to the south, then he was instructed to offer \$20 million. President Polk was unhappy with his envoy's conduct and prompted him to order Trist to return to the United States. General <u>Winfield</u> <u>Scott was als</u>o unhappy with Trist's presence in



Treaty of Guadalupe Hidalgo

Treaty of Peace, Friendship, Limits, and Settlement between the United States and the Republic of Mexico



Mexico, although he and Scott quickly reconciled and began a lifelong friendship.

However, the wily diplomat ignored the instructions. Known to have an over-fluid pen, he wrote a 65-page letter back to Washington, D.C. explaining his reasons for staying in Mexico. He capitalized on a brilliant opportunity to continue bargaining with <u>Santa Anna</u>. Trist successfully negotiated the <u>Treaty of Guadalupe Hidalgo</u> on February 2, 1848. Trist's negotiation was controversial among expansionist Democrats since he had ignored Polk's instructions and settled on a smaller cession of Mexican territory than many

expansionists wanted and felt he could have obtained. A part of this instruction was to specifically include Baja California. However, as part of the negotiations, Trist drew the line directly West from Yuma to Tijuana/San Diego instead of from Yuma south to the Gulf of California, which left all of

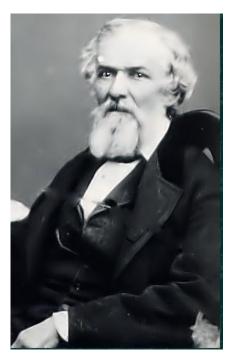
Baja California, though almost separate from, a part of Mexico. Polk was furious. Travel time for renegotiation was a month each way. Polk had no treaty during his Presidency at the time. He reluctantly approved. Trist later commented on the treaty:

"My feeling of shame as an American was far stronger than the Mexicans' could be".

At the time of the treaty negotiations in 1848, California was basically an uninhabited, undeveloped stretch of land that did now have much obvious value. What Trist and those with whom he was negotiated in Mexico about ending the Mexican-American War did not know was that the very week the Treaty of Guadalupe Hidalgo was signed, a frontier carpenter in a remote area near what later became Sacramento, California, discovered some interesting pebbles. Taking them to a civilized area for examination, it was learned they were GOLD NUGGETS! That gave way to what became the great Gold Rush of 1849 to California!

Quickly, California dramatically increased in financial value with the discovery of Gold. The rush of people to get in on the new wealth also had the side effect of creating growing urban and populated areas at a rate so fast that it was dazzling! Unknowingly, our family relative, Nicholas Philip Trist, had garnered for the United States a gem of vast wealth! However, that value was not discerned by President Polk.

Upon Trist's return to Washington, he was terminated from his government position immediately for his insubordination to the President. His expenses since the time of the recall order in October of 1846 were not paid, nor was his salary after that time. Of course, the way things were done in those days,



expense reimbursement and payment of salary while out of town was not done until the diplomat returned to Washington.

Because of President Polk's displeasure with Trist, those expenses and that unpaid salary did not take place until 1871 during the Presidential term of Ulysses S. Grant. Despite a commitment to free trade, Trist supported Republican Abraham Lincoln for President in 1860. While the Lincoln administration did not offer Trist any patronage, he did serve as postmaster of Alexandria, Virginia during the Grant administration.

Trist was also a lawyer, planter, and businessman. He died in Alexandria, Virginia on February 11, 1874, aged 73.

Source: <u>https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Nicholas Trist</u>



These are the two grave stones for Mr. & Mrs. Trist in the Ivy Hill Cemetery, Alexandria City, Virginia.

Below is Martha Jefferson Randolph, Trist's mother-in-law who also was a daughter of U.S. President Thomas Jefferson.



Chapter 20 Sharpe Family Genealogy from German Palatines

Our Sharpe family name derives its earliest roots that I have discovered to have been in Germany, specifically in what was known as the <u>Palatine region</u> in the 1600's. The full genealogical descendants report is 164 pages, available for your viewing at this URL:

http://www.dasharpe.com/Genealogy/Scherp,Otto.pdf

We have learned much of the earlier Sharpe family information through the published writings of Mr. Henry (Hank) Z. Jones, Jr. Hank is a retired RCA recording artist and film and TV actor, residing in San Diego, California. Though he authored numerous articles and books, the series that most impacted my research is his two volumes, <u>"The Palatine Families of New York, 1710 Volume I & II"</u> and his follow-up volume, "More Palatine Families," then succeeded by the three-volume "Even More Palatine Families."



As we had occasion to interface in 2017 about this autobiography, Hank helped by giving some previewing and evaluation that was heart-warming to me. Hank is President & Fellow of the American Society of Genealogists, and is a Fellow of the New York Genealogical & Biographical Society. Hank and I met February 7, 2004 when he was the keynote speaker at a Dallas Genealogy Society Seminar at the Public Library in Richardson, Texas. He autographed and dated my book of his, <u>"More Palatine Families."</u> We've kept in touch since then. His professional career has included appearances in roles in Walt Disney movies and entertainment venues of like-positive character. He also has a church background in common with me. He has been an usher and a Deacon at a Presbyterian Church in the San Diego area. "<u>Scharff</u>" is thought to be perhaps the earliest German form of our Sharp(e) name. Perhaps it was "Von Scharff." It is a South German nickname for an energetic, active person from the Middle High German. One of the most common given names used with it was Otto, which is the name of the earliest ancestor of whom we know, where our story begins.

The Sharpe story begins with <u>Otto Scherp</u>, my 7th great grandfather. Germanborn Otto Scherp is thought to have had more than one wife, as the Laubenheim Church records said that Peter was by his first wife. We have a name for one of his wives, perhaps his second and last wife. Be believe Otto gave issue to five children all together. Otto was born about 1628 in Laubenheim, Germany, and his death date is unknown, but thought to be prior to 1691 (Age 63).

His son through which our family descended, was Peter, born about 1660, but who died about 1690. Peter also had two brothers and two sisters. According to church records a Laubenheim, Germany, Peter served as a warden at the church. A warden was a lay person (non-ordained) who served administratively the clerk leadership of a church. This person was often a volunteer or employed only part time. It did signal that the person was a person of perceived value and use to the ministry of the church.

Below is the image of what was the Sharp family crest back in the 1600s.



It was Peter's son, Jacob A. Scherp, my 5th great grandfather, who was born in Laubenheim, Germany, and who migrated to America. His first documented appearance in America was appearing on the Hunter Lists on August 4, 1710. He was among a group of some 3,000 Germans there in servitude to English overseers. Henry Z. Jones' introduction to his book, "More Palatine *Families*," tells of the negative conditions in Germany around 1700 and following which caused numbers of Germans to depart from Germany. For one thing, Germany had been the scene of several military conflicts, often fought near the doorsteps of German homes, a frightening enough experience. The ruling

Princes levied heavy taxes and other oppressive burdens on the people. And

the winter of 1709 was especially harsh, devastating to the agricultural communities.

Several thousand Germans from the Palatine Region of Germany came basically as a group to England, seeking work and a more livable life. Such did not develop very well. The ruling Queen Anne Stuart was my 26th cousin, 7 times removed. Described another way, Queen Anne is the 8th cousin to the husband of the stepdaughter of my 6th great grand uncle. <u>Here is a relationship chart</u>.

The overflow of German migrants to England were a problem, so Queen Anne had offered a servitude package for them. If they would go with England shipping them to the New World, they would have free passage and could work for their expenses by working the forests (in what would later become New York state) and harvesting sap from the trees. The agreements were reached and about 3,000 Germans were shipped in 1710, landing on Manhattan Island, and going up the Hudson River about 75 miles to settle on the east bank in what became named (and still is named today) Germantown, New York. The agricultural pursuits were not well planned and proved to become a failure, with the English abandoning ownership of the project. The German Palatines were left to survive on their own, and so they did. Amidst great poverty, their industrious spirits enabled them to evolve into a successful community.



Portrait by Michael Dahl, 1705 Queen of England, Scotland and Ireland

Certainly, their steeped experience as Christians and faithful worshippers was a prime element in the well-being that developed for them, prospering them to lives of worth and value.

Jacob A. Scherp, a grandson of our earliest German Sharpe, Otto Scherp, was the first family member to immigrate to the New World, or what later would become the United States of America. Jacob is my fifth great grandfather. As already cited, he was in the group of some 3,000 Germans brought to America by the English Crown to pursue a forest agricultural endeavor in servitude.

Jacob lived to the age of 54. He was apparently the victim of a horse-riding accident when his steed stumbled in the Livingston's Creek. Jacob drown

resulting from the fall, and was discovered by his one of his sons. This was in Livingston Manner, in what later was Columbia County, New York.

My family descending was through his son, Johann Peter Scherp, known as Peter. He's my fourth great grandfather. Peter married twice, but his 13 children were through his first wife, Eva Schneider.

George P. Sharp (notice the Anglicization of the surname from Scherp), my 3rd great grandfather, was the family member who came into the American Revolution. the Revolutionary War. He is cited in the "Calleudes of Revolutionary Manuscripts" in the office of the Secretary of State at Albany, New York (according to some private notes written in 1897 by an unnamed writer).

George served as a 2nd Lieutenant in Captain Herman Hoffman's Company, Colonel John Van Ness' Regiment of Minute Men. He was also 2nd Lieutenant in Captain Andrea Herman's Company, Colonel Morris Graham's Regiment of Foot Service of the U.S. under Command of Brigadier General Clinton. In the National Archives in Washington DC, I located a record (M-804, Roll #2158, Pension Applications for the American Revolutionary War) citing that a Pension was drawn by his widow. Even though George was only age 45 at his death, Rebecca, his widow, lived to an age of 93. This death date was estimated by the Pension record stating when the pension payments ceased. George and his wife, Margaret Rebecca Teater, gave issue to eight children.

John Elsefer Sharp, one of George's children, gave issue to nine children through his first wife, Eve Markie, and four children thorough his second wife, Elizabeth Bodine. This was in <u>Sharon Springs, New York</u>. John is my great grandfather.

It is through John Elsefer Sharp's second marriage that John Elsefer Sharp II was born January 25, 1830 through whom my descending develops. This John is my great grandfather. The move of himself and his family to <u>Ravenna, Portage</u> <u>County, Ohio</u> most probably had to do with his being employed by the Erie Railroad around 1850 or after. However, earlier, in the 1860 US Census, his occupation is listed as a farmer. The 1880 Census lists him as a mason. That may or may not have been with the railroad. It is thought most of his job life was with the railroad.

The US Census of 1880 shows a 19-year old servant named Phoebe Roberts residing. We might assume the presence of a live-in servant reflects some degree of economic affluence for the family.

John Elsefer Sharp and Sarah Lavenna Kellogg gave issue to three sons: Alfred Lansing, Dwight Elsefer and Henry Seth Sharp. After Sarah died, John married a year later to Mary E. Thompson Cope. They gave issue to one child, Charles R. Sharp. The family's Christian beliefs continued here, as they had been from their earliest German roots, in the Lutheran Church.

Here is where surname change occurred. All the records I can find about the family in its Ohio setting spell the surname as "Sharp." Alfred and Henry moved to <u>Georgetown, Williamson County, Texas in</u> 1882 and about 1895. All the records I've found in Texas for these two brothers spell the surname "Sharpe." Dwight, who moved to <u>Chicago, Cook County, Illinois</u>, in every instance spells the surname "Sharpe." Charles, the son from the second marriage, remained all his life in Ohio, apparently always spelling the surname "Sharp." I can find no reason as to which the "e" was added by the three sons who left Ohio, but not the son who remained in Ohio.

Another name change noticeable is that my grandfather, whom we always knew in his life in Georgetown, Texas, was named Harry Seth Sharpe. In recent years, researching online records of Ravenna, Ohio, it came to light that his birth record there gives him the name of Henry Seth Sharp. Harry is a known nickname or AKA for Henry, so it is understandable to see that change. It's just that I do not know of anyone in our Texas Sharpe's who ever said his original name was Henry!

Another interesting matter about this Sharp family in Ravenna, Ohio is John's marriage to Sarah Lavenna Kellogg. Sarah descends from a deeply rooted British family, going back to Nicholas Kellogg of Debden, Essex, England, born October 18, 1458! Joseph Kellogg, born in England 1626, came to America and lived till 1707. Sarah is Joseph's 4th great grandchild. In this famous Kellogg family is John Benjamin Kellogg, the Texian soldier who died in the famous Battle of the Alamo, fighting for independence of Texas from Mexico. John is my half sixth cousin, twice removed. To Sarah Kellogg Sharp, the Alamo hero is her half 5th cousin. Additionally, Sarah is related to Frank Billings Kellogg, her 5th

cousin, twice removed. Frank was the United States Secretary State who was awarded the second ever Nobel Peace Prize to an American for his diplomatic negotiations for bringing peace in the world. That was in 1939. Another political connection with the Kellogg family was the 31st Vice President of the United States, Charles Curtis, who served with President Herbert Hoover. Charles was Sarah's fifth cousin, once removed.



Obviously, well-heeled family lines connected with our Sharpe family in this Ravenna, Ohio marriage of John Elsefer Sharp and Sarah Lavenna Kellogg.

There are some Sharpe's of note to whom whole chapters are devoted in this autobiography, so they aren't covered in this chapter.

The whole Kellogg family report is in Chapter 24. There is Chapter 37 about Willis Sharpe Kilmer, the wealthy New York businessman who made money on advertising, on patent medicine and on horse racing (He owned the 1918 winner of the Kentucky Derby).



Chapter 39 is about Alfred (Fred) Lansing Sharpe who came to Texas in 1882. A distinction for him was being the first Republican elected to the Texas House of Representatives. That was in 1904, representing an area near El Paso. At the time, he was the owner of a large cattle ranch. In Chapter 48, there is another distinctive thing that Fred may not have realized when he was there is that the first Thanksgiving Celebration observed on the North American Continent was in 1598 probably on land that later was part of Fred's ranch.

A man of world fame with connections to our Sharpe family is <u>Sir Winston Churchill</u>. He is so famous, and so much has been written about him that his life and activities will not be included in this autobiography. Suffice it to say that Churchill is the 11th cousin, once removed, to U.S. President Franklin Delano Roosevelt, my half eighth cousin. <u>Here is a chart detailing the</u> relationship.



My grandfather, Henry (Harry) Seth Sharpe came to Georgetown, Williamson County, Texas about 1895. Highlights of the story are cited here, but a detailed section of the genealogy details is found here. These are his descendants flowing from his Texas establishment of the Sharpe family.

http://www.dasharpe.com/Genealogy/Sharpe,Harry.pdf

He was recruited by a military officer named Theodore (Teddy) Roosevelt, we believe at the Menger Hotel in San Antonio, downtown at Alamo Plaza. It is the oldest continuously operating hotel west of the Mississippi River in the United States. It was when Theodore Roosevelt was gathering his Rough Riders in the Menger Bar in preparation for the Spanish American War on Cuba in the Caribbean. A hand-me-down telescope that Harry used in that conflict came to my father, to me and has now been passed on to our son, Todd Wittman Sharpe. Harry was a private in that war, and began drawing a pension in 1927 as a result. He would have been age 53. In 1904, Teddy was elected President of the United States on the Republican ticket.



Harry Seth Sharpe married Mattie de Noailles Simons, Friday, June 7, 1900. Their established church life became the Presbyterian Church there in Georgetown when they joined in 1903. Harry's Lutheran Church background and Mattie's Christian Church background was compromised in selecting the Presbyterian Church, both joining by re-statement of their Christian faith.



His primary occupation seemed to be on the staff at the Williamson County Courthouse in various offices.

Harry and Mattie bore two sons, Dwight Alfred (1901 - 1981 and Harry Simons Sharpe (1904 – 1977). Chapter 33 of this autobiography details Dwight's primary life and ministry as a pastor.

As a Presbyterian Pastor, Dwight and his family moved about, mostly in Texas, but residing once in Little Rock, Arkansas (1929 – 1935). His wife was Martha Dixon Chapman (1904 – 1979). Stories about them and their three children, Taylor, Tiffany and Todd, are in the primary parts of this autobiography.

http://www.dasharpe.com/Genealogy/Sharpe,DwightAlfred.html

Harry Simons Sharpe married Virgie Lois Stapp (1908 – 1988). Aunt Lois might roll over in her grave if she notices my printing her first name. She detested it, and always insisted on being addressed as Lois (or as Aunt Lois in my case). Harry was known as Dee Dee. Early in his life, we served the United States in the Navy. Here is Dee Dee with Lois and their son, Harry, taken about the time Dee Dee would have been entering the Navy (about 1943).

Their two sons were Harry Franklin Sharpe (1936 – 2015) and John Earle Sharpe (1946 – 1997).



One of the favorite family pictures was one taken by Uncle Dee Dee, himself, of all the family gathered to bid farewell to him as he departed to be in the <u>U. S.</u> <u>Navy!</u>



(L to R – adults) Aunt Lois, my sister, Betty Ann, my mother, my sister, Martha, my father, Papa Sharpe and Mama Sharpe. Boys in front were Harry and me.

When Dee Dee returned home after World War II, he and Lois operated a laundry and dry cleaning shop on the south of the Georgetown City Square where the Williamson County Courthouse was. Papa Sharpe work in the Courthouse, and Dee Dee & Lois' shop was in the center of the block on the square. I remember fondly our family visits to Georgetown in the 1940's and visited them in the shop and at the courthouse. Dee Dee and Lois, Harry and Johnny shared the large home of Papa and Mama Sharpe at 1005 Main Street through the rest of our grandparents' lives.

Their home was immediately next door to the First Baptist Church of Georgetown. After Papa and Mama and Dee Dee died, the home was sold to the church, and the Sharpe family moved to 1601 Olive Street. That location ended up being Johnny's home, with ownership split with Harry, as the two sons inherited the home. Johnny bought Harry's share.

Chapter 21 Bradford Family Genealogy

The Bradford family is one of those English families which contributed much significance to the development of the American Colonies in the New World.

Peter Bradford, born in England, is my 13th great grandfather. He may have been born about 1415. He died in England. He is the most distant ancestor in the Bradford family line that we have identified.

Peter's descendants extend through 20 generations in my records. They really could go 22 generations, if we count down to my grandchildren. Peter is the 5th great grandfather of the most famous Bradford, William Bradford who served pretty much as the guiding light leader for the Mayflower passengers and their efforts of survival in creating the Plymouth Colony, arriving in 1620.

Here is an especially detailed report on Governor William Bradford.

He is the principal composer of the Mayflower Compact, and he served several terms as Governor of Plymouth Colony over about a 30-year period. He is my seventh great grandfather.

Here is the entire report of all 20 generations down from Peter Bradford born in England about 1415. It's 336 pages long.

http://www.dasharpe.com/Genealogy/BradfordPeter1415Report.pdf

Here are descendants of Peter Bradford down to me:

http://www.dasharpe.com/Genealogy/Charts/BradfordPeter(1415)Rel.pdf

Chapter 22 Carpenter Family Line Genealogy

The Carpenter family line's significance to our family associates mainly by Alice Carpenter being my seventh great grandmother. She was widowed when her first husband, Sir. Edward Southworth, died where they lived in England. She travelled the Atlantic Ocean to become the wife of <u>Plymouth Governor William Bradford</u>. It is through that marriage of Alice and William that my family is descends.

They represent a significant family in America, with William being one of the original Mayflower passengers arriving in November 1620, and his being one of the small group's leaders. The basic composition and wording of the Mayflower Compact, though its author is not recorded, is assumed by historians to have been William. He was one of the few passengers who was educated. He was learned in six languages, including Greek, Hebrew and Latin, based upon his desire to know how to study the Holy Bible. Other languages were his native English, French and Dutch.

Alice's recorded ancestry went back earlier from her for a dozen generations to Mr. Jean LeCarpenter, who was born about 1220. They resided in Belgium. He is my 18th great grandfather. I am in the 22nd generation down from Jean LeCarpenter. His most distant descendant recorded is Mr. Kyle Eastwood, the son of famed American movie actor <u>Clinton "Clint" Eastwood</u>, who would be my seventh cousin, three times removed. Jean LeCarpenter would be Clint's 20th great grandfather.

<u>Here is the 25 generations</u> of the Carpenter family in a descendants report format.

This is the chart, showing the relationship of me to Jean LeCarpenter, born 1220, my 18th Great Grandfather.

Chapter 23 Dixon Family Line (First of our Family in Texas)

Felix Benedict Dixon (1818 - 1896) is the earliest ancestor of mine with a presence in Texas. First and most importantly to me, he was a citizen of the Republic of Texas.

The data gathered for this Dixon research was intended as the initial step toward qualifying me to apply for membership in the revered genealogical society, the Sons of the Republic of Texas. Texas residents present before February19, 1846, the date Texas ceased being a Republic and became a State in the United States, represents the ancestry cutoff date necessary for that membership qualification. Felix even became an elected official in the Republic of Texas, having been elected San Augustine County Surveyor in 1844.



That was somewhat of an important political position to win, as that was in the days when land grants were being distributed, and surveyors work was required to define the borders of land grants.

Born in Ohio in 1818, Felix B. Dixon migrated to Texas circa 1840. He was a pioneer in San Augustine County, Texas, living there over 50 years till his graduation to heaven at the advanced age of 78.

One element that is sought to have been enlightened in these stories is the Christian heritage that our family has enjoyed and pursued. I have been in four generations of Presbyterians through my Sharpe family, but Felix now skips that to a presence in my fifth generation.

Felix makes me a fifth-generation Texan, defined as having every generation since him to have been born in Texas. Were it not for the fact that my children were born in New Orleans, my grandchildren would be seventh generation Texans! But, alas, the claim cannot be made. The old saying is true. The important things are location, location and location. However, I do have one Texas-born niece who is a sixth-generation Texan, Nancy Lea Ehlers Reeves, who lives in Round Rock, Williamson County, Texas. Her three children are the only seventh generation Texans in my lineage, and one of them has three children who are eighth generation Texans. They are my great, great niece and nephews.

On December 3, 2005, I was inducted into the membership of the Ephraim M. Daggett Chapter #36 (Fort Worth) of the Sons of the Republic of Texas.



We have genealogical data from John Dixon down for eight generations. John was my third great grandfather, born about 1800 in West Virginia, and was the husband of Sarah Benedict born about 1800, also in West Virginia. We do not know their death dates, except to say they were after 1822, the birth year of the younger child of whom we know that they had, Felix Benedict Dixon. Felix was reported in the San Augustine, Texas U.S. Census as having been born in Ohio in 1818. That is not documentation, but hearsay he gave the Census taker in 1850. That same Census report is our only knowledge of John and Sarah being born in West Virginia.

However, we do have data on the ancestry of Sarah Benedict, going back to Thomas Benedict (November 9, 1694 – July 4, 1776). He married Abigail Hoyt, estimated born about 1812. They are my sixth great grandparents. It is sad to see his death day to be the day American colonists announced the Declaration of Independence. It is likely that Thomas did not know of that momentous occasion.

<u>Here is a descendants</u> report on the Dixon family from John Dixon, father of Felix Benedict Dixon, down through eight generations. It is 102 pages.

<u>Here is a descendants</u> report of the Benedict family going down through the Dixons, Abneys, Chapmans and to Sharpes, covering ten generations. It is 100 pages.



My understanding is that Felix Dixon and his family were members of the Bethel Presbyterian Church. Organized as the Bethel Presbyterian Church at Goodlaw School House by the Rev. Hugh Wilson on June 2, 1838 with the following charter members: James, Isabella, Joseph and Martha Sharp; H. G. Peggy, James and Elam Alexander; John, Synta and Amanda Polk; Robert and Margaret Tibbets; Elizabeth Erwing; Mary McEiver; Polly Nicholson, Elizabeth Dunham, Catherine Dart, Adeline Stodart; Ann McKnight; and Jack and Hanna Sharp (African American). It is claimed that this was the first main line Presbyterian Church established in Texas. The Rev. Mr. Hugh Wilson was an ancestor of my friend, Hilda (Tinker) Rautenberg. I knew she and her husband, William (Bill) at Highland Park Presbyterian Church, Dallas, Texas where I was on staff as Executive Administrator to the Senior Pastor 1982-2004. Back in the 1940s, Hilda was part of the Moon Maids singing group on the popular radio music program, Vaughn Monroe.

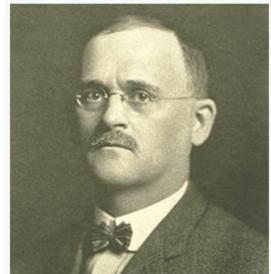
This is a distinguished family line with early roots in Texas. It is a blessing to be a part of it.

Chapter 24 Kellogg Family Line

The Kellogg family line begins with our earliest recorded ancestor, Nicholas Kellogg, born October 18, 1458 in Debden, Essex, England. He married a woman names Audley whose birth year was 1465. They are my 12th great grandparents. Our gathered family data covers 17 generations from them.

This family line has three people who are of special interest to me. One is <u>Will Keith</u> <u>Kellogg</u> (April 8, 1860 – October 5, 1951). Affectionately known as "W. K.," he is my half fifth cousin, three times removed. Our ancestor in common is <u>Joseph Kellogg</u>, Will's fourth great grandfather through Joseph's second wife, Abigail Terry. Joseph and his first wife, Joanne Foote, represent the line through which I descend. They are my seventh great grandparents.

Will Keith Kellogg



Will Keith Kellogg was a businessman, and founder in 1906 of the Battle Creek

Kellogg, c. 1897

Toasted Corn Flake Company (now the <u>W. K. Kellogg Company</u>). He married Ella O. Davis in 1880.

"W. K. Kellogg started out selling brooms as a young businessman then moved to Battle Creek, Michigan to help his brother John Harvey Kellogg run the Battle Creek Sanitarium. There in one of the labs they produced the first flaked cereal. W.K. Kellogg saw this as a great business opportunity, and wanted to keep the production of the product a secret. John Harvey disagreed, and allowed anyone in the sanitarium to come see the flaking process. This allowed a fellow sanitarium guest, C. W. Post to see the process, thus inspiring him to start his own company, which became Post Cereals and later General Foods. C.W. Post then made his first million dollars off the sales of his new product; this upset W.K. Kellogg, who then left the sanitarium to create his own company."

Source:http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Will Keith Kellogg

"Will Keith Kellogg lacked a formal education beyond the sixth grade. When he died Oct. 6, 1951, at the age of 91, he had amassed a fortune and enriched the lives of people in his hometown, and millions of people around the world. Will Keith Kellogg, creator of the cereal company and the foundation that bears his name, led three professional 'lives' while making his mark on Battle Creek and the world.

"The world-renowned benefactor and cereal industry leader began as a clerk at the <u>Battle Creek Sanitarium</u>, also known as the San. It was there,



The Kellogg House

searching for a vegetarian diet for patients, that he discovered cereal flakes. His first job was as a stockboy, followed by the life of a traveling broom salesman in his late teens. He finally went to work as a young man in the San, where his older brother, John Harvey Kellogg, was physician-inchief. Will Kellogg was bookkeeper and manager of the world-famous hospital, which put virtually any task outside of medicine under his purview.

"For years, he assisted his brother in research aimed at improving the vegetarian diet of the San's patients, especially the search for a digestible bread-substitute by the process of boiling wheat. They never achieved their basic purpose, but stumbled on a major dividend. In 1894, Will Kellogg accidentally left a pot of boiled wheat to stand and become tempered. When it was put through the usual rolling process, each grain of wheat emerged as a large, thin flake. Will persuaded his brother to serve the food in flake form, and it was an immediate favorite among the patients.

"Soon it was being packaged to meet hundreds of mail order requests from persons after they left the San. Because John Kellogg had little interest in such matters, his brother added another task to his long list of responsibilities: that of managing the burgeoning packaged food enterprise. Using his sense of economics, an understanding of marketing techniques and hard work, Kellogg constantly increased production, advertising budgets and sales. He expanded his business to Australia in 1924, guided the cereal company through the Depression (he increased advertising while others cut back), and brought Kellogg's cereal into England in 1938.

"W.K. Kellogg, who, at age 46, founded the Kellogg Company, was never comfortable with his riches. In the 1920s, when many captains of industry were building castle-sized summer "cottages" with 40-car garages, Kellogg lived a comparatively modest life. Even as a millionaire, he resided for years in a two-story stucco house on 256 West Van Buren Street in Battle Creek Michigan.

"As a father, he feared the pitfalls of unearned wealth. None of his children would ever become rich through inherited money. Explaining his tight rein on the family purse, Kellogg once wrote, 'I want that my sons develop into conscientious and truthful men.' As his wealth grew, Kellogg gave generously to charitable causes, many involving children. By establishing the Kellogg Foundation, W.K. Kellogg sought to focus his philanthropy. In 1934, W.K. Kellogg donated more than \$66 million in Kellogg Company stock and other investments to establish the <u>W.K. Kellogg Foundation</u>.

"Kellogg was fiercely competitive, but also quiet, reserved, somber, an introvert. Still, over the years, his support of charitable causes was enormous and varied. He became convinced that the most good could be accomplished by helping young people. In 1925, he established the Fellowship Corporation. The Fellowship Corporation helped to build an agricultural school and a bird sanctuary, and to establish an experimental farm and a reforestation project. Kellogg also donated nearly \$3 million to hometown causes, such as the Ann J. Kellogg School for handicapped children, a civic auditorium, a junior high school, and a youth recreation center.

"<u>President Herbert Hoover</u> named him a delegate at a White House Conference on Child Health and Protection. He returned from the conference, determined to help. As a result, in June 1930, the W. K. Kellogg Child Welfare Foundation was born. A few months later, he broadened the focus of the charter, and renamed it the W.K. Kellogg Foundation. "Through his philanthropic work, Mr. Kellogg demonstrated great compassion and caring and acted on his belief that the most good came from helping people to help themselves--giving them the opportunity to do what is important to them. Kellogg worked at the Foundation until just before his death. His grave in Oak Hill Cemetery in Battle Creek is marked by a simple monument of stone. But his legacy lives on."

Source:http://www.ideafinder.com/history/inventors/kellogg.htm



Kellogg circa 1913

The actual developer of the dry cereal process was a medical physician, John Harvey Kellogg (1852 – 1943), who was the brother of Will Keith Kellogg. Will took his brother's invention and ran with it as a developed business. I wonder if, when they went to church worship, as the offering plate came be, was their contribution a "cereal" offering? Just a little fun pun!

The second Kellogg of interest to me is John (Johnny) Benjamin Kellogg II, my half sixth cousin, twice removed. He is believed to have been born in Missouri in 1817. Our common ancestor is Joseph Kellogg (1626 -1707). Joseph and his first wife, Joanne Foote, are my seventh great

grandparents. Johnny is descended from Joseph through his second wife, Abigail Terry. They are Johnny's fifth great grandparents. Described another way, Johnny is the 4th great grandson of my 7th great grandfather, Joseph Kellogg.

Johnny joined the relief force from Gonzales and rode to the Alamo, where he arrived on March 1, 1836. He died in <u>the battle of the Alamo</u> on March 6, 1836. He was a Private rifleman in the Gonzales Rangers. In some of the quotes below, he is cited with suffixes to his name as "II" or "Jr." It is suspected that he should not have a suffix, per his descendent with whom I spoke in October 2006, Mr. M. Dennis Kellogg (who died about 2008).

Source: http://www.tamu.edu/ccbn/dewitt/gonzalesrangersf-k.htm

<u>Here is a compiled story</u> I've written about Johnny, which you may browse here.

The third Kellogg of special interest to me is <u>Frank Billings Kellogg</u>, born December 22, 1856 at Potsdam, Saint Lawrence County, New York. He died December 21, 1937. His significance is that he is a winner of the Nobel Peace Prize! In fact, he was only the second American to win that award. Click on his name above to learn of that story.

There are, of course, many more credible and admirable people down through the Kellogg family, and some of their experiences are recorded in the report below.

We have a 199-page descendants report on the Kellogg family, beginning with Nicholas Kellogg, born in 1458. It goes down through 17 generations.

Chapter 25 Chapman Family Line

My Chapman family is the surname of my Mother's born name. The data we have for the Chapman family covers 10 generations, beginning with William Chapman, my 5th great grandfather. He was born in 1652 in Essex County, Massachusetts. We have not found access to his English heritage yet.

Chapman is a word in England usage to mean an occupational name for a merchant or a trader. That trait could be seen in my Mother's young brother, Herschell Albert Chapman. He was a very successful insurance salesman. Uncle Albert, as I knew him, was born



Herschell Albert Chapman San Francisco • 1940

December 12, 1905 in Lufkin, Angelina County, Texas. He died January 9, 1952 in Alameda, California, where the bulk of his adult life was lived.



As an element of his financial success, it was said that he always drove an up-to-date Packard automobile, which was in the high end of

automobile prices. Here is a model from the late 1930's when he would have owned such.

My Mother was Martha Dixon Chapman, born April 5, 1904 in Lufkin as well. Their father was Dr. James Herschell Chapman, a physician who trained at a Medical School in Memphis, Tennessee when it took only two



years of study to earn a Medical Doctor's degree. He practiced medicine as family physician his entire career in Lufkin.

Dr. Chapman was born October 2, 1853 at Cuthbert, Randolph Country, Georgia. We understand that James Herschell Chapman migrated from his Georgia roots to East Texas as a very young man, though we do not have the details about why, how and when that transition was made. There is family "folk lore" to the effect that James Herschell Chapman owned East Texas land near Beaumont for a while, selling it at agricultural or rates. The motivation to sell was to get tuition money for Medical School. Some years later, on January 10, 1901, the first great Texas oil well discovery, <u>Spindle Top</u>, was situated on that same land, just south of Beaumont, Texas, so the story goes. This was the gusher event that began the Texas Oil Boom! It would be interesting to determine through land deeds, if that is true, or if it merely be typical genealogical "evangelastic" reporting?

Dr. Chapman was a prolific man in marriage. He had three wives, outliving the first two, then leaving the third wife as a widow. His first wife was Minola Manning (1862-1896), whom he married in 1878. They bore five children, but, unfortunately, I have not been able to learn who took them to raise after their mother's death. My efforts to contact any of their descendants have been fruitless.

It is of interest to observe that in the 1880 U.S. Census of Angelina County, Texas, James Chapman, listed as a 27-year old physician married to a 17year old wife, Minola, with an infant son. They lived just three houses down the street from the family of William A. Abney and Martha Jane Dixon Abney. In that household was two-year old Margaret Lavina Abney, who became James' second wife 19 years later.

Dr. Chapman's second wife was Margaret Lavina Abney (1878-1909), whom he married in 1899. It was through her that my Mother and her brother were born. She was known as Maggie. A Yellow fever epidemic killed about 14,000 people in the southern United States, a plague that similarly took Maggie's life in 1909, when my Mother was only five years old.

Since Dr. Chapman was the same age as Maggie mother, Martha Jane Dixon Abney, it seems inappropriate for him to reside as a single man with a woman his same age. So, he moved out to his private lodging. My grandmother raised my Mother and Uncle. Martha Jane's husband helped for a while, but he died only four years later in 1913.

Dr. Chapman's third wife was Josephine T. Moore (1868-1959). They bore no children, and Dr. Chapman died March 2, 1925. My Mother lost her parents at her ages of Five and 19, thus depriving me of knowing grandparents on my Mother's side of the family.

A June 1940 visit to California was the one and only time ever I was in the presence of Uncle Herschell (Albert) and Aunt Gertrude (Gertrude L. Johnson born 1892). The visit included visiting the San Francisco's World's Fair in 1940. He died in 1952 and she in 1983, never bearing any children. California was so far away from us in the patterns in which we moved that

we never got out there again. Gertrude did have a first marriage and had a child or children, but I have no records of them.

An interesting aspect about that June of 1940 visit to Oakland, California was that my genealogical friend, Mr. Henry Z. (Hank) Jones, Jr., whom I'd meet some 64 years later, and from whom much valuable genealogical information was learned, was born in Oakland that very same month, June 4, 1940, that my mother and myself, her one-year-old son, were in Oakland! There could have been Divine destiny for me to be there when Hank came into the world! Hank, professionally, is an entertainer and film actor, having appeared in several Walt Disney movies, etc. Another common thread with us was both having been Deacons in the Presbyterian Church at various times.



The <u>ten generations of Chapmans</u> are accessible here. It is a 105 page document. This is a chart showing the relationship between me and <u>my 5th great grandfather</u>. Here are photographs of my Uncle Albert and my Mom, both about 1940.

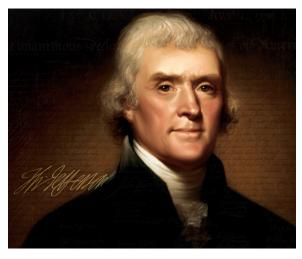




Chapter 26 Abney Family Line (our longest direct line – 47 Generations)

This Abney family line is the longest line of direct ancestors for which my research has been developed. This is on my Mother's side of the family. The earliest ancestor noted is Gor Thorrasson, born about 400 AD. He's my 38th great grandfather. He is from the land later known as Norway. He was a Viking, which meant he probably was a pretty tough character. The records here report on 47 generations over a 1,400-year era. That means that the average generation is about 30 years (the time from one's birth till the first child for which that person gave issue.

The <u>genealogical report of descendants of Gor Thorrasson</u> is 489 pages in PDF format, which you may view online. You may save it on your computer, if you like. Here is the genealogical chart showing <u>my lineage from Gor Thorrasson</u> to myself.



There are two Presidents related to the Abney family. <u>Thomas</u> <u>Jefferson</u> (L) and <u>Zachary</u> <u>Taylor</u> (R). Also, there are several of English monarchs that touch the Abney family



line.

Thomas Abney



Sir Thomas Abney was Mayor of London circa 1700. He had an interesting connection with Isaac Watts, the English Father of Hymnody.

Dannett Abney, my 7th great grandfather was born in Leichester, England February 26, 1699. Dannett came to Virginia by 1692, as evidenced by being mentioned as an assignee of Thomas Pate, arresting John Lovett to the court in York County, Virginia. When he migrated to the New World, he brought with him Mary Lee, who was to become the wife of his older brother, Paul. Paul and Mary had become engaged while still in England, and before Paul came to the New World circa 1680. Later, after Paul died, Dannett marred Mary Lee himself. Mary Lee was the step sister of both brothers.

Dannett acquired 419 acres with William Hill and 381 acres himself, both with patents dated September 28, 1728, and both by English King George II.

The Abney Family's early residence in the New World was in Virginia. Next they located in South Carolina, then on west to Mississippi. They came to Lufkin, Texas, which was where my Mother was born. Her Mother was an Abney who married a Chapman.

Chapter 27 The Rockefeller Family



Goddard, as we understand he was addressed with his middle name, is the eldest ancestor in the Rockenfeller (Rockefeller) family line that was destined to be such a significant influence on the American scene later as the United States

developed as a first world power. The family line would include Governors of New York (<u>Nelson</u>) and Arkansas (<u>Winthrop</u>), and a Vice President of the United States (Nelson as

well). It would include the donor of the \$8,000,000 to buy the land on which the United Nations buildings are situated. And, of course, the family is replete with philanthropic activities that have benefits countless charities and good causes. One I particularly like is the <u>Rockefeller</u> <u>Museum in Jerusalem</u>.



Something unique about Nelson and Winthrop Rockefeller is they were brothers. They are the only two brothers in all our history who served as elected State Governor at the same time in two different states! At <u>the 1968</u> <u>Republican National Convention</u>, Winthrop Rockefeller received backing from members of the Arkansas delegation as a favorite son presidential candidate. He received all his state's 18 votes; his brother Nelson, then concluding a major presidential bid against Richard M. Nixon, received 277. This was the only time in the 20th century that two brothers' names, Winthrop and Nelson, were placed into nomination at the same time at a political party national convention for the office of President of the United States.

The prominent element of the Rockefeller family developed with the life of <u>John Davison Rockefeller, Sr</u>. He was born in a one-room rural cabin in New York state in relative poverty, and rose to become considered the wealthiest person in the United States.

His son, John Davison Rockefeller, Jr. also continued the business success and philanthropic endeavors of the family. He married Abigail Greene Aldrich, a daughter of U.S. Senator Nelson Aldrich of Rhode Island, himself being a man of American significance.

John Davison Rockefeller III served as chairman of the board of trustees of the Rockefeller Foundation from 1952 to 1971. He participated in the forming of the Lincoln Center for the Performing Arts in New York City. He gave leadership to the Population Council, a group that conducted research on population problems across the world.

Additional political success can be seen in the nephew of these two brothers, Mr. John Davison (Jay) Rockefeller, IV. He was elected to the House of the West Virginia State Legislature, to the Governorship of that state and to six successive six-year terms in the United States Senate, representing West Virginia. Jay's fatherin-law was U.S. Senator Charles H. Percy of Illinois, and Jay was cousin to Arkansas Lieutenant Governor Winthrop Paul Rockefeller, the son of <u>Governor Winthrop Rockefeller</u>.



So, these facts, coupled with the immense wealth of the three generations of Rockefellers above them, including the wealthiest man in the United States, makes for quite a unique family!

Goddard is the great, great grandfather of Johann Phillip Rockefeller (born about 1747). Phillip married Catherina Sharp, who is my great, great, grand aunt on my father's side of the family. That's how the Sharpe family became connected with the Rockefeller family.

Goddard was born in Germany the very same years as <u>Alice Carpenter</u> was born in England. Alice represents marriages to two men associated <u>with two of the most significant documents in the world about governance</u>, human and civil rights. Her first husband was a descendant of <u>King</u> <u>Edward I</u>, one of three generations of English Kings who issued 17 editions of the Magna Carta. Her second husband was Plymouth Colony Governor <u>William Bradford</u>, a co-author of the Mayflower Compact.

To have a share in relating to the Rockefeller family is to have a share in great cultural, artistic and economic accomplishments in American History. It is my privilege to be related to such a family.

Chapter 28 McElroy Family Line

The genealogical report of the McElroy family attached to this autobiography is a <u>61-page document covering 11 gene</u>rations. The earliest McElroy was a man for whom we have not information as to his full name, nor any spouse information. All we know is that he had three sons named James, John and Hugh. Our family is derived through this Hugh. He is the <u>seventh great grandfather of my wife</u>, Suzanne Margaret Boggess Sharpe.

Hugh was from Scotland came to County Down, Ireland at a date not certain, but guessed to be about 1685. He bought some land at Kate's Bridge in the Parish of Ballynahinch about twenty miles south of Belfast. He had at least three sons that the source author knew, but might had more. Tradition has the all McElroys of County Down are descended from three brothers who came from Scotland at the "time o' the persecutions." They were said to be from the region of Glasgow in Scotland before coming to County Down in Ireland. These three they referenced from Scotland and went into County Down were John, Hugh and James. It was said that Hugh had at least three sons named John, Hugh and most likely Robert. Some of the descendants of Hugh still reside at Kate's Bridge. Four or five generations of McElroy are buried at the Churchyard near the Old Ballyroney Presbyterian Church in Ireland.

The origin of the McElroy name: McElroy has been in use for many centuries. In O'Hart's Irish Pedigrees it can be traced back a thousand some years. The ancient form of the name was Gillereagh given in O'Hart's pedigrees. A Frank Adam of Edinburgh in 1896 claimed McElroy was derived from the original name of McGillivray. McElroy had a couple of meanings, one original one was son of a King. In Gaelic, Mac or Mc means son. According to O'Hart the name McElroy means son of a gray-haired servant. Some claim the "roy" in McElroy means red, from which derived the meaning of Son of Red head for the name McElroy. McElroy in Scotland before coming to Ireland were suspected to be from the Argyle and Lanark areas. McElroys were not highlanders in the strict sense. McElroy was of Celtic origin. They never had a distinct clan, but were connected with the McGilvrays, and were entitled to wear the plaid of the Clan McGillivray. Highlanders of the mountains had hardly felt the influence of Presbyterianism or of the Reformation, and almost knew nothing of the Bible. They were an illiterate and fierce bunch of six thousand or so. They were called upon to go to the Lowlands and assist in exterminating the Covenanters. The persecutions ceased with the Revolution of 1688. This was a dark time, people of Scotland had suffered miseries of one form or another, violent death and imprisonment and other unspeakable. Estimated nine thousand people fled Scotland to Ireland in this time. Source "The Scotch Irish McElroys in America" by Rev. John McElroy, published in 1901.

The first of the McElroy's that came to America arrived about 1760, settling in the Big Spring, Pennsylvania area. Over time, the family line came to Ohio, then Nebraska, then Iowa.

My mother-in-law, Alice Loraine McElroy, married Thomas Shelton Boggess, Jr., who became the parents of my wife, Suzanne.

Chapter 29 Heard Family Line

Chapter 30 Westmoreland Family Line

Our daughter, Tiffany Lenn Sharpe, married Steven Odis Westmoreland March 21, 1998 at the Highland Park Presbyterian Church of Dallas, Texas to form a wonderful marriage and family of five children: Katherine Michelle, John (Jack) David, twins Lily Taylor & Sarah Todd, and Samuel (Sam) Lee. Suzanne and I have been especially blessed to have them reside less than three miles from our home in Wise County, Texas since about 2006. That proximity has allowed us to accomplish many occasions to be involved in the growing up years of these grandchildren.



The first way we are looking at the Westmoreland family line is through the descendants of <u>Paramund</u>. Paramund was born about 370 AD in Westphalia, Germany. He died about 430 AD at Rhine River Valley, Germany. This descendants report is almost 400 pages long.

Paramund is the <u>25th great grandfather</u> of Louis, husband of Eleanor of Aquitaine (1123-1204), the 14th great grandmother of Edward Southworth, the husband of Alice Carpenter, my 7th great grandmother. This line goes down 59 generations to the Westmoreland children.



What is the significance of following this line for our family? The Paramund line is a line of descendants flowing through the Westmoreland family into which our daughter, Tiffany Lenn Sharpe Westmoreland, married when she married Steve O. Westmoreland. Tiffany's mother-inlaw, Betty Katherine Covington Westmoreland, generously provided for me most of the Westmoreland

genealogical information, and my appreciation of her is great for that. There are some interesting people in that line. Here are the interesting people in that line.

This descendants' line from Paramund of Germany contains 59 generations coming down to our contemporary family, down to our Westmoreland grandchildren. This line comes through our son-in-law's connections.



Notable names most people may recognize include <u>Charles "The Hammer"</u> <u>Martel</u> (686-741), Mayor of the Palace, ruling the Franks, and best remembered winning the <u>Battle of Tours</u> in 732, a battle that halted the Islamic expansion in Europe at that time.

William the Conqueror is best known for leading the Normans from France across

the English Channel to conquer England and to have himself crowned King of England in 1066.

King John of Lackland (1167-1216), thought to be one of the worst monarchs of England, is first of three generations of Kings who issued a total of 17 versions of documents of governance that became known as the Magna Carta. Those kings were him, his son, King Henry III (1207-1272), and his grandson, King Edward I (1239-1307). The essence of the Magna Carta were these kings agreeing, under political pressure, to relent from the practice of the King having the only "say" in matters of government, and that the "people" had a say in certain matters. These "people" were the Barons who would be

Edward I



Portrait in Westminster Abbey, thought to be of Edward I

similar in function to a legislature or what we would perceive as our U.S. Congress.

Infamous English King Henry VIII (1491-1547) who had six wives is included. U. S. President <u>Thomas Jefferson</u> (1743-1826) appears in this line. English <u>King George III</u> (1738-1820), who ruled England during the American Revolution. <u>Abigail Smith</u>, a famous American woman who became married to the second President of the United States, <u>John Adams</u>.



English Queen Victoria (1819-1901). Her husband was an also quite famous personality, Prince Albert (1819-1861). At the time of her reign's end, she was the longest reigning English monarch as of that time, a record to be surpassed only by our contemporary Queen Elizabeth II.

The sixth U.S. President, <u>John</u> <u>Quincey Adams</u> (1767-1848), is in this family line. He is the first President whose father also had served as President. This line contains the 12th President of the United States,

General <u>Zachary Taylo</u>r (1784-1850). This family line also has the 16th U.S. President, <u>Abraham Lincoln</u>.

English King <u>George VI</u> (1895-1952), the father of our current Queen Elizabeth II (born 1926), is there, along with his daughter, as well as <u>Franklin Delano Roosevelt</u> (1882-1945), the 20th President of the United States in in this family.

Another way to view the Westmoreland family is to go from my son-in-law, Steve O. Westmoreland back to the earliest relative, who is <u>Godwulf</u> (80 AD – 125 AD). Godwulf is the <u>34th great</u> grandfather of the 26th great grand uncle of Betty Westmoreland and the 28th great grand uncle of my Westmoreland grandchildren. Betty is the mother of Steven O. Westmoreland, my son-in-law. Godwulf is the 67th generations back from Steve. <u>The report of about 75 pages long</u>.

This report contains English <u>King Edward I</u>, his father, <u>King Henry III</u>, and his father, <u>King John of Lackland</u>.

They were the three generations of English Kings who issued the 17 versions of what became known as the <u>Magna Carta</u>. Included is William the Conqueror, crowned King of England 1066. You'll see Charles "The Hammer" Martel in this line.

We did not know at the time of their marriage, but subsequent research has allowed us to realize that Steve and Tiffany are related, even prior to their marriage!

Steve is the 24th great grandson of English King Edward I. Tiffany is the 20th great granddaughter of English King Edward I. That makes them 20th cousins, four times removed.

Chapter 31 Boggess Family Line

The Boggess family line is that of my wife, Suzanne Margaret Boggess Sharpe. It is a rich heritage of English roots beginning in our knowledge with Robert Bogguss, born about 1615 in England. This covers twelve generations.

Robert is the eighth great grandfather of Suzanne. The Boggess name, as with most names, has several variations of spellings over the years. The hearsay is that it is a nick name from Middle English of the term, "boggis," which means boastful or haughty.

Thanks to Dr. Julian Eugene (Gene) Boggess III of Columbus, Mississippi, we have this researched information about possible Boggess connections in England prior to Robert Boggess' entrance into the New World.

Robert and his wife, Mary came to the New World sometime prior to 1649, the birth date of their fourth child, who was born in St. Stephens Parish, Northumberland County, Virginia. The other three children, John, Andrew and Nell, be believe were English-born, but we have no date or background information on them.

The Boggess family remained in Virginia for several generations. Richard H. Boggess moved to Kentucky and died there by 1809. Jeremiah Boggess, born in 1753 in Virginia, went to Georgia, dying about 1845.

Bennett Milton Boggess, born 1765 in Virginia, moved to Tennessee. His son, Bennett Boggess, moved to Alabama and married Eliza L. Wellborn. They are Suzanne's second great grandparents.

Their son, Thomas Shelton Boggess, was born in Alabama and moved to Macon, Noxubee County, Mississippi, marrying Frances Ann Levina Barton, a Wilkes County, Georgia lady. The Boggess family line moved to and remained rooted in Macon and nearby Columbus till contemporary times. My father-in-law and his wife both lived there when I married Suzanne in 1962.

Here is a chart showing the relationship of Robert Boggus and Suzanne and me.

You can view <u>the descendants report</u> of the Boggess line from Robert Boggus down to our grandchildren. It's s166 pages long.

You can view the <u>Boggess line ancestors</u> back from Suzanne for a dozen generations. It is a report that is 51 pages long.



Here are two of our children, Tiffany Lenn Sharpe and Taylor Marcus Sharpe in a photo with Aunt Lillian Elaine Boggess, wife of Francis Montgomery (Monty) Steele. This photo was November 1980.





On the left, is Frances (Fanny) Ann Levina Barton (1864-1893), who married Thomas Shelton Boggess (1847 – 1888). Frances is the ancestor after whom our niece, Francis Barton Boggess, wife of Andres

Gallegos, was named.

This is Frances Barton Boggess and her husband, Andrew Gallegos, the wedding being April 11, 1984.







Here are Lindley Jones Cheathum who married Suzanne's brother, Dr. Thomas Shelton (Tom, Doc) Boggess III, in the mid 1960's.





To the left is Captain Thomas Shelton Boggess, son of Bennett & Eliza Wellborn Boggess. Eliza, his mother, is shown here.

Eliza is Suzanne's great, great grandmother.

This is Mary Belle Hicks Taylor, wife of Thomas Shelton Boggess, Sr., Suzanne's grandparents. Mary is the artist who drew these paintings that grace the walls of our Sharpe home in Aurora. These drawings are dated 1914.





Here is Alice Loraine McElroy, wife of Thomas Shelton Boggess, Jr. who became parents of my wife, Suzanne Boggess Sharpe. This is a photo of Alice as a beauty at Louisiana State University in 1934.



This is Alice Loraine McElroy Boggess with her husband, Thomas Shelton (T. S.) Boggess, Jr., with their first child, my wife, Suzanne Margaret Boggess about 1939.



This is about one-year-old Alice Loraine McElroy with her mother, Maud Baker Heald McElroy, about 1915. This is the September 4, 1935 wedding of Alice Loraine McElroy and Thomas Shelton (T. S.) Boggess, Jr., destined

to be the parents of my wife, Suzanne Margaret Boggess.





These are scenes of my wife, Suzanne Margaret Boggess Sharpe in high









Two of our children, Taylor & Tiffany with Suzanne and me, together with our nephew, Peter Jumper and his wife, Nancy





Showing the beauty of Suzanne

Suzanne and I are visiting with our Congresswoman Kay Granger, former Mayor of Fort Worth, Texas.





Suzanne & her Commission as an Admiral in the Texas Navy, appointed by the Governor of Texas





Suzanne with our daughter, Tiffany

Suzanne dancing with her Dad



Chapter 32 - Jumper Family Line

The earliest form of the Jumper surname we understand was spelled "Schombert." We are in debt for early genealogical information in the family line from Mr. Sherman E. Jumper of Eads, Tennessee

Chapter 33 My Father – The Rev. Mr. Dwight Alfred Sharpe



DWIGHT ALFRED SHARPE was born on 04 Sep 1901 in Georgetown, Williamson County, Texas. He died on 02 Aug 1981 in Alamo Heights, Bexar County, Texas. He married Martha Dixon Chapman (daughter of Dr. James Herschell Chapman, MD and Margaret Lavina Abney) on 31 May 1926 in Lufkin, Angelina County, Texas. She was born on 05 Apr 1904 in Lufkin, Angelina County, Texas. She died on 02 Aug 1979 in Alamo Heights, Bexar County, Texas.

Dwight Alfred Sharpe was born the year that <u>George Gallup</u> (11/18/1901- 7/26/1984), the American statistician and pioneering opinion researcher, was born. They died just less than three years apart.

My father lived through some of the turbulent times of racial strife in this nation. January 1901 was a stormy time in the South of the United States. On January 15, 1901, the Alabama Democratic Party called for a convention to write a new state constitution that would prohibit African-Americans from voting. Despite vocal opposition from Booker T. Washington and other Republican civil rights activists, the Democrat strategy succeeded. Democrats dominated Alabama's 1901 constitutional convention, and its chairman was a Democrat. In his opening address, he said: "If we would have white supremacy, we must establish it by law -- not by force or fraud... The negro is descended from a race lowest in intelligence and moral precepts of all the races of men."

Alabama's African-American citizens would not vote in appreciable numbers again until the 1950s. It was a Republican federal judge, Frank Johnson, who in 1956 ruled in favor of Rosa Parks. It was that same judge who in 1965 ordered the Democrat governor, George Wallace, to permit Martin Luther King's voting rights march from Selma to Montgomery. At the 2000 Republican National Convention, <u>Condoleezza Rice</u>, destined to become the United States Secretary of State, said: "The first Republican I knew was my father, and he is still the Republican I most admire. He joined our party because the <u>Democrats in Jim Crow Alabama</u> of 1952 would not register him to vote. The Republicans did. My father has never forgotten that day, and neither have I."

The Democratic Party of today does not want Americans to remember that Republicans supported the 1964 Civil Rights Act much more than did the Democrats. It was passed in the U. S. Senate only after an 83-day filibuster led by the Democratic Party leadership in the Senate.

Source: http://grandoldpartisan.typepad.com/

This is the story of my father:

The guiding spiritual light in the family for Dwight's early years was his Mother, who saw to it that he had an involved and effective life in the <u>First Presbyterian Church there in Georgetown</u>. <u>The Williamson County Sun</u> newspaper issue of June 7, 1979, published an extensive full-page article and pictures on page 11 about the 125th recognition of the church's anniversary. Dwight was cited as being one of only three members of that church who went into the pastoral ministry over the 125-year time of its existence at that time.

Dwight's approval for candidacy for the Gospel Ministry was given by the Session of that church in 1922. I have a photocopy of the Minutes of the Session meeting. This was just after the retirement of Rev. M. C. Hutton, who was cited as one of the most effective pastors in that church's history, serving some 35 years from 1886 till 1921. He was the pastor whom we understand had influence and encouragement on Dwight in his thinking and feeling a call to the ministry. The Session minutes were much more descriptive about the praiseworthy characteristics of Dwight than typical minutes are in today's world of just recording that the action was approved. Those details are a little later in this narrative.

Dwight was born in the year (in fact, just two days before) that President William McKinley was assassinated by an anarchist and was succeeded by Theodore Roosevelt. Roosevelt, is the uncle of the wife of President Franklin Delano Roosevelt, Dwight's half seventh cousin, once removed. President William McKinley's assassin, Leon Czolgosz, was electrocuted October 29, 1901, just 55 days after the terrible event! WOW! Is that not justice faster than we see today?

It was the same year (1901) the Social Revolutionary Party was founded in Russia, later to be what we came to know as Communism. Film producer Walt Disney was born this year. Industrialist <u>J. P. Morgan</u> organized the U. S Steel Corporation, who was Dwight's fifth cousin, once removed. The first American Bowing Club tournament was held in Chicago in 1901 as well.

(Source: "The Timetables of History" 3rd Revised Edition, Bernard Grun, Simon & Schuster, New York1991, pages 454-455) And he was born a few months after England's Queen Victoria died in January.

The famous Jazz player, Louis Armstrong was born the year of

Dwight's birth. Two days before Dwight was born, Vice President <u>Theodore Roosevelt</u>'s famous advice, <u>"Speak softly and carry a</u> <u>big stick,</u>" was offered in a speech at the Minnesota State Fair. That was the same day as the <u>assassination of President</u> <u>McKinley</u>.

On Dwight's 17th birthday, the beginning of his senior year in High School, September 4, 1918, there was the birth of <u>Paul</u> <u>Harvey</u>, who later would become a world-wide known radio commentator, even still broadcasting as recently as 2007. He graduated to heaven in 2009.

Dwight was President of his 1918 High School graduating class in Georgetown, Texas. He also was Business Manager of the School Annual, Salutatorian of his class, Vice President of the Literary Society, had a role in the Senior Play and lettered two years on the track team. In the yearbook, the Senior Class prophesy about him to become a famous Texas lawyer!



He created a life-long bond of friendship with fellow student Walter Johnson, a neighbor in Georgetown who was physically disabled (wheel chair bound) and required personal tutoring during junior high and high school years. Dwight gave generously of his time. Walter married a woman who taught school, and they lived a wonderful life in the Hill Country of Texas on one of those clear spring-fed creeks. We visited them several times over the years while I was a young boy, shown in this photograph.

The high school data was made available to me when Mr. Tass Waterston, a member of Highland Park Presbyterian Church, visited me soon after my 1982 arrival on the staff of that church.

He brought the 1918 High School Yearbook of his, and I could photo copy relevant pages. Tass was a "best friend" and the same age as my father's younger brother, Harry Simons Sharpe, as they all grew up in Georgetown. Harry was known as "Dede." Tass has now passed on to graduation to heaven, but I was able to get to know his son, Tom Lee Waterston, and his grandsons, Tass Waterston II and Ted Waterston. Ted and his family have continued as members of Highland Park Presbyterian Church, whereas the rest of the family has moved out of town by now. Ted served that church as a Deacon. That's the church where I served as Administrative Executive to the Senior Pastor 1982-2004.

Dwight worked during high school in a combination general store and grocery store. The many migrant workers patronizing it created the environment in which he learned to converse in Spanish pretty well. This enabled him in later years to preach occasionally for Hispanic Presbyterian congregations.

He attended for one school year (1918-19) the University of Kentucky, the state that had been his mother's family's home from where they migrated to Texas. While attending The <u>University of</u> <u>Kentucky</u>, he stayed with a relative of his mother's, in a sense, a man called Uncle Tom Vance. Next, he attended for a year <u>Southwestern University</u>, a Methodist institution located in his hometown of Georgetown. Dwight's photograph is in the 1921 Southwestern University yearbook that my niece, Nancy Lea Ehlers Reeves, now has from materials she received after her Mom, Martha deNoailles Sharpe Ehlers, died. Martha is a daughter of Dwight's and is my eldest of two sisters. Southwestern began in 1840, during the days of the Republic of Texas. I understand it is the oldest continuously operating institution of higher education in Texas.

The 1920 U. S. Census for Lexington, Fayette County, Kentucky has Dwight living with the family of John T. Vance, age 62, whose wife's name was Glenna (legibility question), also age 62, and a

26-year-old daughter named Mary. Possibly, the middle initial of "T" is for the Tom that we have understood was the home where Dwight resided while at school. This Mr. Vance would have been born in 1858. The Census entry shows Mr. Vance was born in Texas, but that his father and mother were born in Kentucky. The 1860 Census of Lexington, Burleson County, Texas shows him in the house of Charles Vance, with Tom being age three.

It is curious to know that a Mr. Charles P. Vance moved from Kentucky to Texas at around 1854, settling initially in Circleville, where the Alfred Simons family settled, coming from Kentucky. James A. Simons, born in Kentucky in 1852, and whose family came to Circleville in 1852, later, as an adult, went into mercantile business with Mr. Vance, both in Circleville and later in Taylor. Both of these towns are in Williamson County, Texas.

Since Mr. John T. Vance, with whom Dwight lived in Kentucky in 1920, was born in 1858 in Texas, it can be assumed that John T. Vance was a son of Charles P. Vance, and a brother to the Vance daughter, Sarah. If that kind of family connection does not exist, we do not have any other logical reason that Dwight went to Kentucky and lodged with the Vance's in Lexington. I think the set of relationships conjectured are likely, and I am recording them in my records until and unless other proof surfaces. It is interesting that the Vance families had connections to towns named Lexington, both in Kentucky and in Texas. Since their move to Texas in the early 1850's was when so many communities were just being established, one wonders if one name influenced the other.

The Minutes of the Session, July 26, 1922, record the declarations of his presence before them, seeking endorsement for his candidacy:

"Mr. D. A. Sharpe, a communing member of this, the Georgetown

Presbyterian Church (as it was called then), presented himself before the Session and communicated the fact that he felt a call from the Holy Spirit to enter the Gospel Ministry, and to devote his whole time, first to the preparation for such work, and then to the active ministry in the Presbyterian Church in the United States. After an examination of Brother Sharpe, touching his determination to enter the ministry, the sureness of his call by the Holy Spirit, and his need of financial aid in prosecuting his studies and receiving the Seminary courses, the Session, by a unanimous vote, gives unanimous testimony to his good, moral character, to the fact that he is a faithful, consecrated and active communicating member of the Georgetown Presbyterian Church in good standing and we recommend him to the Presbytery of Central Texas for reception under its care as a fit candidate for the Gospel Ministry, and ask the Presbytery to furnish and secure for him such financial aid as may be required for the prosecution of his studies in the University of Texas and the Presbyterian Seminary."

Dwight graduated from the <u>University of Texas</u> in 1926 and from <u>Austin Presbyterian Theological Seminary</u> in 1926. I often wonder how he managed graduation dates from both institutions in the same year, though I do not know the months.

His seminary class consisted of 14 men pictured here. An arrow points to him on the back row, in the center.



Part of the time, if not much of it, that Dwight lodged in the Austin Presbyterian Seminary dormitory was with a roommate by the name of Will Morriss. Will was from a solid Presbyterian family in San Antonio, but he was in Austin as a student at the University of Texas Law School when they were roommates. Later, Will married and had a son name Ed, who was a Drake Fraternity brother of mine in 1957-1959 in my days as a student at the Presbyterian school in Sherman, Texas, Austin College. Ed graduated. However, he met a tragic death in the Air Force during the Viet Nam era when the aircraft in which he was being transported disappeared into the depths of the Pacific Ocean, never to be found again. His sister, Molly, also became an Austin College graduate whom I knew there. She later married a Fraternity Brother of mine, David C. Duncan. David subsequently graduated from Austin Theological Seminary and served a career as a Presbyterian pastor, including the church at Georgetown, Texas, my father's home church.

	Texas, Williamson County Marriage Records
	0/34 MARRIAGE LICENSE EECS THE STATE OF TEXAS County of Williamson County of Williamson
	To any Regularly Licensed or Ordainod Minister of the Gospel, Jewish Rabbi, Judge of the District or County Court, or any Justice
	of the Peace in the State of Texas-GREETING:
	Between Mr. Detring II - O. & July - and M. is in Olive the Construction of the Country within sixty days thereafter, certifying your action under this License. WITNESS my official signature and seal of office, at Georgetewn, Texas, the <u>4.2</u> " day
	ot Alberty vinte_
	[L. 8.] P. C. Moore
	ByDeputy, Clerk of County Court, Williamson County, Texas.
	A. M. Bevel May yell I minor in Marriage Mr. Devery posity par more flat iny of may well I minor in Marriage Mr. Devery W. Sharper and Migg Marthan D. Chappersoner, of parties above named WITNESS my hand, this Stat and of May 100 C Mer. M. M. Bargel Liften, Secare
_	Beturned and tiled for record the lat day at Sume 1926, and recorded the lay at Sume ton P. C. Marance By Sate Whatteneberg Deputy. Clerk County Cours.

My father and mother were married in her home living room in Lufkin, Angelina County, Texas on May 26, 1926, immediately following their graduations from college and seminary. Though married in Angelina County by the Rev. Mr. H. M. Bevel, their marriage license, Texas Certificate #19260134, Record #55104, was acquired through Williamson County, Dwight's home county. That is where the certificate was filed on June 1st.

Dwight spent his career continuously serving, mostly in Texas, as pastor of churches in this order: Laredo (1926), Little Rock (Arkansas 1929), Ballinger (1935), Houston (1941), Sweetwater (1951), Dallas (1954), San Antonio (1958), Ruidoso (New Mexico (1963), and finally at Houston (1965) for a new church development. In several of these cities, he was a member of

<u>Rotary International</u>, a community service organization of business and professional people associated across the world. From my memory, they included Dallas (Fair Park Club), Sweetwater and San Antonio (nearby to Ballinger), and probably included other communities without my recollection or knowledge. In Laredo, it was the <u>First Presbyterian Church</u>. In Little Rock, it was the Pulaski Heights Presbyterian Church.

The Arkansas Gazette, Little Rock, Arkansas, Texas on February 8, 1929, page 8, reported that the Rev. Dwight A. Sharpe, age 27, accepted the pastorate of the <u>Pulaski Heights Presbyterian</u> <u>Church</u> as of March 1. His first sermon was to be preached on Sunday, March 3, 1929. The article said that Rev. Sharpe accepted the church's call by telegram! It said his pastoring had been for three years in Laredo, Texas after graduating from the Austin Presbyterian Theological Seminary in Austin, Texas. It also cited his graduation from the University of Texas, including one year each at the <u>University of Kentucky</u> and at <u>Southwestern</u> <u>University of Georgetown, Texas</u>. Rev. Sharpe succeeds the pastorate of the Rev. Mr. C. A. Harper, who'd resigned in the Fall of 1928 to take a pastorate in Louisiana.

His pastoral activities appeared in the newspapers occasionally. In the *Arkansas Gazette*, Saturday, June 1, 1929, page 14, an article cited the expected sermons for the following Sunday. One of the pastors was Dwight Sharpe, Pastor of the Pulaski Heights Presbyterian Church, located at Woodlawn Avenue and Walnut Street. The Sunday 11:00 AM sermon was to be "The First Breakfast," and the 8:00 PM sermon was to be "An Honest Doubter." The same newspaper had an article about his sermons to be October 4, 1930 at 11:00 AM, "To Serve or Not to Serve," and at 7:30 PM, "Not Your Battle, But God's." (Saturday, October 2, 1930, page 22)



In Ballinger, it was the <u>First</u> <u>Presbyterian</u> <u>Church</u>. This was a special place for our family and his ministry. I was born there and baptized there! The family had an old Chevrolet automobile of about a 1931

vintage. When it came time for Dwight to respond to a pastoral call to move the family to Houston, Texas, the Ballinger congregation generously responded by providing the funds from among its members to purchase a brand new 1941 Chevrolet sedan! That was quite Providential, as 1941 was the last year that American automobiles were produced, due to the constraints of World War II starting. It is doubtful that the old 1931 Chevy would have made it through the War years of 1942-46. God's Provision is perfect, isn't it? Our family drove that car till 1948!

The photograph was taken to create the Sharpe's Christmas Card greeting for the Christmas of 1938. I would have been a developing fetus in my Mother's tummy at this time, being born the following June. Daddy's hobby developing in that era was photography. Not only did he take photographs, he also constructed a "dark room" to develop from film his own photographs. This 1938 Christmas Card was the first of a series of traditional card he produced every Christmas up to 1980! Here's another Christmas, 1944, wherein I was present as a 3_ year old boy!



In Houston, it was the Central Park Presbyteri an Church that changed its name to <u>Trinity</u>

Presbyterian Church when it changed location in 1950. Today, it has merged with a predominately Hispanic constituency church, and has the name, in that same location, of the <u>San Pablo-Trinity</u> <u>Presbyterian Church</u>. In Sweetwater, it was the First Presbyterian Church. In Dallas, it was the John Knox Presbyterian Church. This was the church where many of my fond memories reside, as it was during my high school years, and my experiences of growing up emotionally and having dating experiences were strong. In San Antonio, it was the Highland Park Presbyterian Church. In Ruidoso, it was the <u>Ruidoso</u> <u>Presbyterian Church</u>. In Houston again, it was the Garden Oaks Presbyterian Church. It was a new church development of the Presbytery. Unfortunately, it did not survive long after his 1968 retirement.

Over the years, sometimes during the family's vacations times, Dwight studied toward earning a Theological Master's degree from the Austin Theological Seminary, Austin, Texas. This was achieved and recognized at the graduation commencement services in Austin, May 18-21, 1952. He was one of five ordained Presbyterian Pastors awarded Master's degrees that year. <u>Here</u> is the program. He had TWO theses produced and approved. The first one was "<u>The idea of God in the Old</u> <u>Testament.</u>" The second thesis was "<u>Arthur Gray</u> <u>Jones: Nobleman of God</u>."

After my arriving in Dallas, Texas as a staff member at <u>Highland</u> <u>Park Presbyterian Church</u> in 1982, I was visited by an Elder of the church, Mr. Austin B. Watson. He gave me a telephone directory page, complete with photographs of those listed, of the 1955 Fair <u>Park Rotary Club of Dallas</u>. Austin, still a member of that club, had been there when my father was a member. It was so nice of him to give me the page where my Dad was listed, along with his photograph. Austin went on to join Dwight in heaven in 2003.

Dwight was a reconciler and a rebuilder of churches. Many of his calls were to churches that had experienced some sort of setback in the immediate past, and his coming helped things get mended in the church's ministries.

A married couple at Trinity Church in Houston went to the mission field in the Belgium Congo 1951-1968. Eric S. Bolton was an architect and his wife, Ruth Lomig Bolton, was an administration worker. Missions was a strong emphasis for Dwight's ministry and for Texas Presbyterian Churches.

Retired missionary Winnifred K. Vass compiled a roster in 1986 of all 427 Presbyterian missionaries who had served over the years in the Presbyterian Congo Mission. Texas was represented by 65 (15%) of all who had gone from 30 states. This certainly is a disproportionately large share from Texas, representing more than twice what would be the average.

Winney, spent her retired life as a member of Highland Park

Presbyterian Church and she, along with her missionary husband, Lachlin Vass, lived at Presbyterian Village North in Dallas, a retirement community that many of the people of Highland Park Presbyterian Church were included in its development. Lach Vass, Winnie's husband, was on the HPPC Business Office staff when I arrived, then he retired in 1983. I selected his son-in-law, <u>Mr. Todd W. Rutenbar</u>, to take Lach's place, working with me as my Assistant Business Manager. Todd was still working with there when I retired in2004, and still is there in 2018 as this is written.

My Father's last call in the ministry was to be the establishing evangelist for a new church development in Houston, Texas under what then was known as Brazos Presbytery (now known as <u>New Covenant Presbytery</u>). "Brazos," his Presbytery in Houston, means "arms" or "hugs" in Spanish, as my niece Frances Barton Boggess tells me.

Dad assumed the position of Evangelist and organizing pastor for the Presbytery for the church to be Gulf Meadows Presbyterian Church at 8000 Fuqua Street at Ballantine in distant southwest Houston. He assumed the post on April 3, 1966, and got a good start, even having a handful of members who formerly were at Central on Sherman Avenue and at Trinity Presbyterian Church at 7000 Lawndale in earlier years (1941-51) when he pastored there.

Unfortunately, the pastor following him experienced problems that ultimately resulted in the church disbanding. The church had had a good start, but was not yet strong enough to survive such a bump in the road. I think that pastor got too organized. Though I never met that pastor, he was the brother of <u>a young lady I dated</u> a few times while we were students at Austin College in Sherman, Texas. Both she and her husband became good, productive members of a prominent church in Houston and assumed leadership roles. Her husband, Tom Flannagan, was a friend from my high school in Dallas and was my freshman and sophomore year roommate at Austin College in Sherman, Texas.

The invitation letter for Dwight's retirement services, dated April 8,1968, was received by various members of our family. It came from Reuben Meeks, Committee Chairman at the Gulf Meadows Presbytery Church and who was a former member of our Trinity Presbyterian Church. His retirement reception was the afternoon of April 28, 1968 at the church. It was a wonderful occasion for our family to attend. This was the conclusion of forty-two years as a Presbyterian pastor. Suzanne and I, along with our two children (Todd wasn't born yet), were there.

Dwight and Martha had purchased a home for retirement in San Antonio (Alamo Heights). It was at 201 Normandy, just a couple blocks west of Broadway, a major north-south street. Since it was purchased more than a year prior to planned retirement, it was leased to tenants. Unfortunately, when they finally retired, the renters, for some reason not acceptable to Dwight and Martha, were unable to vacate the house on time. Dwight and Martha had to make temporary digs do till they could get over this frustration.

This was their last home and a lovely home it was in a lovely neighborhood of San Antonio, Bexar County, Texas. Actually it was in a suburb named Alamo Heights, a city surrounded by San Antonio. They were just two blocks from the <u>Alamo Heights</u> <u>Presbyterian Church</u>, which they made as their church home. He was used to teach an Adult Sunday School Class up until about six months prior to his death at age 79, which gave him good outlets to use his pastoral gifts. The pastoral staff also used him for visitation and other duties useful for the ministry of the church. This was volunteer work, to my knowledge, and a labor of love for him.

His primary hobby through many of the years of his life was photography. It manifested itself to most people through the hundreds of unique Christmas cards with family members that he created for over 30 years. He used the typewriter for much for his correspondence, Bible study and sermon preparation. It was an ancient Underwood manual typewriter, on which he typed using what we laughingly called the Bible Method he would seek and find! He may have been one of the fastest typists using only the index fingers of his two hands that I have ever witnessed. Finally, around the mid 1970's, he acquired a portable electric typewriter from Sears!

He was a prolific reader, both of periodicals and of books. He held his children to high standards for academic achievement, and that was successful for his daughters. My academic records were far over shadowed by those of my two sisters.

Dwight involved himself in the communities where the family lived. He would join civic organizations and do joint ministries with other churches. He often became known in the public media, as evidenced by this delightful column by Renwick Cary in the "San Antonio Light" newspaper issue of August 4, 1963:

"Back to the word 'breeches' (pounced britches by many Texans) and its use in several places in different versions of the Bible. Rev. Dwight A. Sharpe, pastor of the Highland Park Presbyterian Church, notes there was one edition of the Geneva Bible (1560) that became popularly known as the 'breeches Bible." This because 'breeches' appeared in Genesis 3:7. The verse concluded: 'And they (Adam and Eve) sewed fig tree leaves together and made them breeches as a matter of fact, however, Sharpe says, the same rendering of the verse was found in the Wycliffe Bible (1380).

"Still on the subject of Bibles of the centuries past, we are reminded that the first printed copy of the whole Bible was the Coverdale Bible of 1535. Sharpe says: 'It's a credit to the printers that there were few typographical errors in the early Bibles.' Even so, he reports, in the second edition of the Geneva Bible (1562), Matthew 5:9 was made to read: 'Blessed are the placemakers, instead of peacemakers.' As a consequence, collectors designated this as the 'Placemaker Bible.' Sharpe also tells of a 'Printer's Bible,' explaining: 'This was the name applied to the King James edition of 1653, because in Psalms119:161, King David was made to say: 'Printers have persecuted me without cause.' It should have read, 'princes,' of course."

Both Dwight and Martha were very quiet regarding the subject of politics. They felt that whatever political views they held should not become known to the public of their congregation, since ministry was still to be given to people of all political persuasions. They did not even allow me to know how they voted or what political party they supported until well into my adult life, after I became an active Republican and Dad had retired from the ministry. Dad told me that they had always voted Republican, and living in what was virtually an all Democratic Party state in Texas most of their lives, it was best for his ministry to keep that to themselves. I recall that many of our close family friends were active Democrats and Labor Union members (particularly in the Houston years of the 1940's) and that did not affect our opportunity to have close Christian relationships with them.

When Dwight died, he was found in bed on August 8, 1981. That has been the official published date of his death, as that is when he was found and the public officials proclaimed him deceased. However, judging from when it was reported he was last seen by neighbors, and by the dates on accumulated newspapers and mail at his home, he apparently passed away in his sleep on the night of Sunday, August 2nd, two years to the day that Martha also went to be with our Lord in her sleep. He lacked a month of reaching his 80th birthday.

Dwight's funeral was conducted by the Rev. Mr. Newton Cox, pastor of the Alamo Heights Presbyterian Church of San Antonio,

Texas, and assisted by an old friend of Dwight's, a retired minister, the Rev. Mr. John Parse. Two of my friends from high school days attended, Jewell (Judy) Linn Shoup Shannon and Dr. Richard (Dick) Hall White. The funeral was at the church at 10:00 AM on August 12, and the graveside service was later in the day in Georgetown, Williamson County, Texas, some 110 miles away. He rested next to his wife, and near his parents and other relatives at the <u>Odd Fellows Cemetery</u>, near the campus of Southwestern University. This is the college where he attended his sophomore year and where his great granddaughter, Victoria (Vicky) Lea Reeves attended, having entered as a freshman in 2003.

On October 20, 1981, the Session of Trinity Presbyterian Church, Houston, Texas, passed a resolution that on Sunday, November 15, Dwight would be honored and memorialized for his faithful decade of service there with the dedication of a pew. His daughter, Martha, and her husband, Vic, attended the dedication service on November 15,1981 at the church to represent the family. During his ministry there, according to the Sessional Resolution, Dwight received 312 members by transfer of church membership, 164 members by profession of faith in Jesus Christ (I was one of those on Palm Sunday, March 18, 1951!), baptizing 91 of those, baptizing 99 infants and receiving 11 of their parents on profession of faith at the same time. Under his ministry, three young men made commitments to the Gospel Ministry and one couple went to the mission field in the Congo. He administered infant baptism to all nine of his grandchildren.

Dwight lived to see one of his great grandchildren, Matthew, son of Kevin and Nancy Reeves. Nancy is the daughter of Dwight's daughter, Martha. We are proud of Matthew in the family sense, as he married Libby and they went on to give issue to the first eighth generation Texan member of our family in 2005, Benjamin Thomas Reeves. He now has a second son, Zachary, and now Grace has joined their family. Nancy is the Pastor of the <u>Grace</u> <u>Presbyterian Church</u> of Round Rock, Williamson County, Texas. Matthew's younger brother, Christopher Thomas Reeves, now is married to Jessica Robyn Radachy Reeves.

Dwight Alfred Sharpe was a man of unquestioned integrity and was known as a man with a pastor's heart. He provided well for his family, raising children who were a credit to their parents' Christian values. My regret is not spending more time with him, especially in our adult years. Physical distances of living kept us from enjoying that as much as we should have. Notes for Martha Dixon Chapman:



My mother, Martha, was born April 5, 1904, the year that <u>Theodore</u> <u>Roosevelt</u> had his first election to the Presidency of the United States, after having succeeding William McKinley who was assassinated while President. This was the year that author Jack London published <u>The Sea-Wolf</u>. Puccini's <u>Madame Butterfly</u> opera opened in Milan, Italy. Work began on <u>the Panama Canal</u>. The <u>Rolls-</u> <u>Royce Company</u> was founded in England. Helen Keller graduated

from Radcliffe College and the <u>Broadway subway opened in New</u> <u>York City</u>.

(Source: "The Timetables of History" 3rd Revised Edition, Bernard Grun, Simon & Schuster, New York 1991, pages 456-457)

Martha was born in her Lufkin home at 419 Abney Avenue. Living on a street with your family name is a hint as to the place the family held in the eye of the community. Her mother's maiden name was Abney. Her church life was in the First Methodist Church. Martha was ages five and 21 when her parents died, which was a hardship. She and her younger brother, Herschell Albert Chapman, were raised after Mother's 1909 death (Maggie was her nickname from Margaret Lavina Abney) by their grandmother and grandfather, Martha Jane Dixon Abney and James William Abney. Dr. James Herschell Chapman, their father, resided with them in the Abney home for a while.

Martha Jane Dixon Abney, Martha's grandmother, was widowed in 1913, and Dr. Chapman soon moved out from the house. He

had been much older than his wife, Maggie, actually being only one year younger than his mother-in-law, Martha Jane Dixon Abney. Family oral tradition reported that he felt it was more appropriate to move out, as it did not reflect the proper appearances for an unmarried man and woman so close in age to be domiciled together.

Maggie continued to raise his children, Herschell and Martha, in her home. After Dr. Chapman married the third and last time, to a woman named Josephine, his contacts with the Abney family apparently became somewhat detached, or at least the recording of continuing relationship has not been identified by me.

Martha had a high school teacher of science named Mr. Blevins. It is of interest to know that he also taught me in Dallas, Dallas County, Texas during my ninth grade in 1954, at <u>Alex W. Spence</u> <u>Junior High School</u>. There is also a Miss Bess Wood of Lufkin who taught at that same Dallas school at the time, and who remembers my being there. She is Lillian's Aunt, Tempy Wood Abney's sister. Bess was born March 17,1897. In 1987, Bess resided at the Angelina Nursing Home.

Martha attended the University of Texas at Austin, graduating in June of 1925. On the certified copy I have of the information she completed with her application to college, on the blank requesting her home address, said *No Street Address*. When you live on the street bearing your family name (Abney) and you are the only "mansion" on it, apparently there is no need for an address back then. You could just address a letter to them in Lufkin! Such were the days!

She was elected a member of the honor society, <u>Phi Beta Kappa</u>, according to the certified college transcript copy, the first scholastic fraternity in America. Phi Beta Kappa was organized at the <u>College of William and Mary in Williamsburg</u>, <u>Virginia</u> on December 5,1776.

She had a double major in Latin and Greek. She was then engaged to fellow University of Texas student and Austin Theological Presbyterian Seminary student, Dwight Alfred Sharpe. She taught in the Lufkin Public Schools the ensuing year after graduation.

Martha's education was in the classics, which was the usual major for the very few women of that day who were privileged to attend college. Martha and her husband-to-be would be the first generation of our family to graduate from the University of Texas. Now, three generations have graduated from there and a fourth maybe is on his way!

Growing out of that refined education was her skill in writing. I cherish the one "love letter" that came into my possession only in recent years that my Mother sent to my Father during the year that she taught school in Lufkin and he completed his Seminary studies in Austin before they married. Here is how the letter of October 20,1925 went:

"Dearest Sweetheart

"Please forgive me for writing on this paper. I'm in a powerful big hurry and can't hunt for any more. Last night I had so many papers to grade that I got sleepy and went to bed without ever writing to the sweetest person on earth. I thought about you, dearest, between papers and the last thing before I went to sleep, and the first thing this morning. Honey, you're in my heart all the time. I'm going to scribble this off just so it can be mailed this morning, and it won't be late. Tell me if you get it tomorrow morning.

"I'm the happiest thing, because I had a sweet letter waiting for me from your mother yesterday when I came in from school. Dwight, already I just love her to death. Don't tell your father, but she said when he read my first letter, he said "Well, I'm kinda left out on this deal." She said he was a little jealous, but said she was to send his love anyway. Now I just believe I will write him a little note or letter all to himself. I may enclose it with your next letter and you can give it to him when you pass through Georgetown Saturday. Is that all right? You know how easy it is for women to talk to each other, but because I'd never met him, I just felt a timidity in writing.

"The funny thing about it is that I was writing to your mother the same time she was writing to me. Guess she received mine yesterday too.

"Sweetheart, love me lots and don't blame me for writing like this. I just had so much work. I'll promise never to let it happen again. I'll write again tomorrow night.

"Must hurry up and eat breakfast now. Want to eat with me? I built the fire this morning.

Lovingly, Your own Martha"

Well, how's that for good romantic narrative?! Wonderful!

Serving as wife of the Pastor suited Martha well. She loved living the role and the people loved her doing it. After marriage, her only gainful employment was as a public school teacher in Houston, Harris County, Texas during the 1940's World War II years when there were such shortages of people to teach. During her daughters' high school years, she served as adult sponsor for the High School Youth Fellowship at the Central Park Presbyterian Church, located in the 6900 block of Sherman, a couple of blocks east of 75th Street, near Wayside Boulevard. Fondly remembered by me are the summer trips on the weekends when the whole Sharpe family and the Youth Fellowship spent all day Saturdays at <u>Stuart's Beach in Galveston</u> on the Gulf of Mexico. One of my favorite memories were the many times when we went riding on the old fashioned wooden roller coaster near the beach!

Reading was also an avocation for Martha. She "screened" much material for Dwight, marking articles and books she though it would be good for him to read. She truly was a helpmate for her husband in all of the best senses of that concept. She was a lady of the South in all of its good senses of culture and heritage. And she was a wonderful mother to me, always holding up the bar for me to climb higher for better things, and to know God and our role with Him.

Her remains left behind when she graduated to heaven are deposited in the grave site adjacent to her husband in the Georgetown Cemetery, near Southwestern University, Georgetown, Williamson County, Texas.

Dwight Alfred Sharpe and Martha Dixon Chapman had the following children:

MARTHA DE NOAILLES SHARPE (daughter of Dwight Alfred Sharpe and Martha Dixon Chapman) was born on 07 Sep 1927 in Laredo, Webb County, Texas. She died on 17 Jan 2002 in Round Rock, Williamson County, Texas. She married Victor Marcus Ehlers (son of Victor Marcus Ehlers and Edith A. Amberg) on 06 Sep 1947 in Central Park Presbyterian Church, Houston, Harris County, Texas. It later became Trinity Presbyterian Church. He was born on 25 May 1923. He died on 26 Apr 1985 in Austin, Travis County, Texas.

ELIZABETH ANNE SHARPE (daughter of Dwight Alfred Sharpe and Martha Dixon Chapman) was born on 09 Aug 1929 in Little Rock, Pulaski County, Arkansas. She died on 28 Dec 1973 in Saint Louis, Missouri. She married Andrew Albert Jumper (son of William David Jumper and Irma Belle Nason) on 14 Aug 1948 in Central Park Presbyterian Church, Houston, Harris County, Texas. He was born on 11 Sep 1927 in Marks Quitman County, Mississippi. He died on 28 May 1992 in Chesterfield, Saint Louis County, Missouri.

DWIGHT ALBERT SHARPE (son of Dwight Alfred Sharpe and Martha Dixon Chapman) was born on 24 Jun 1939 in Ballinger, Runnels County, Texas. He married Suzanne Margaret Boggess Sharpe (daughter of Thomas Shelton Boggess and Alice Loraine McElroy) on 30 Sep 1962 in New Orleans, Orleans Parish, Louisiana. She was born on 02 Apr 1938 in Griffin, Spaulding County, Georgia.

There is a <u>77-page report here</u> that details the descendants from Dwight Alfred Sharpe for four generations.

Chapter 34 My Father-in-Law – Mr. Thomas Shelton Boggess, Jr.



Thomas Shelton Boggess, Jr., known to most folks as "T. S.," or "Tom," is a significant component in the citizenry of Noxubee County, Mississippi, and its county seat, Macon. Born March 30, 1912, the year of the Titanic, he approaches a vigorous age 89 as this article is written. Our interest in him for this publication grows from the participation he has given in the <u>Boggess Family Association</u> over most of its years of existence, including hosting its National Boggess Reunion Conference at his farm just north of Macon in July of 1999.

His roots there go back on the Boggess side of the family to his Great

Grandmother, Eliza Levina Wellborn Boggess. She was a Wilkes County, Georgia born lady whose 1830 marriage to Bennett Boggess was in Huntsville, Madison County, Alabama, where they gave issue to seven children. Her Grandfather, Isaac Wellborn, was an American Revolutionary pensioned soldier and a member of the original Legislature of Alabama in 1819, when he served representing Madison County. The Wellborn line in America goes back to Englishman John Wellborn and family whose post shipwreck landing took place at Jamestown, Virginia on May 25, 1610.

Widowed in 1842, Eliza and most of her family moved to Macon in 1856 when she was age 50. She purchased land in Noxubee County with money borrowed from her two brothers, who'd relocated there from Georgia about 1833. She made a name for herself at Noxubee's County Fair. T. S. possess her prize cup passed on to him by his father, with the engraving "Premium Noxubee Fair, 1859." The prize probably was for domestic skill, as opposed to agricultural activity, but exactly what accomplishment is now lost to unrecorded history.

The Boggess line in American goes back to the entrance about 1644 of Englishman Robert Boggess in Northumberland County, Virginia. Another family line is represented with Frances Ann Levina Barton, T. S.'s Grandmother, whose Noxubee County roots are in the Barton and De Jarnette families. The farmland on which T. S. resides presently dates back in that family and with the Burgesses to 1842.

T. S. was the only child of Thomas Shelton Boggess, Sr. and Mary Belle Hicks Taylor. He was born in Texarkana, Texas where Mary had gone to be with her family for the delivery. Her father was dentist Dr. John T. Taylor, and her mother was Ida Capatolia Hicks. They were living in Texarkana in 1912. Ida's mother was a Nelson of Philadelphia, descended from one of the Declaration of Independence signers, Thomas Nelson, Jr. of Virginia.

A bastion of properness, Mary kept a strong hand on little Tom in his growing up years. She was shaping and molding him into the gentleman and the scholar he would become. The family owned several farms over the years, and built the home in 1925 in which T. S. resides today. That location is about five miles north from the Town Square in Macon, on Magnolia Road.

Tom Boggess, his father, was the first person baptized in the current Macon First Baptist Church building, which was in 1910. T. S. made a Christian commitment in his early teens, and joined that church. Clara Virginia Boggess (Aunt Jenny) was a key in T. S.'s growth in that church.

The Noxubee County Fairs, which began in the 1850's, had a close connection to T. S.'s family. Five generations of Burgesses grace the annals of the Fair. Besides his Great Grandmother Eliza being a prizewinner at the Fair of 1859, his grandfather, Captain Tom Boggess first appeared on the Fair scene in 1884 to promote it and to participate in the showing of farm animals. T. S.'s father, likewise, participated and gave leadership to the Fairs over the years. Then, in 1923, T. S. first appeared as the 11-year-old youth winning the \$5.00 First Prize in the Pony Race! His two children appear as well in 1953. Suzanne Boggess had the 4-H Senior Champion Jersey Cow and Grand Champion Dairy Animal. She showed Tennessee walking horses owned by her grandfather. T. S.'s son, Tommy Boggess, III, won a prize for an entry in the swine competition. The Fairs went by the way side after 1960, and have been no more. T. S. authored "History of Four Fairgrounds in Noxubee County, Mississippi," which was published serially in 1988-89 by the Noxubee County Historical Society in its quarterly Journal.

In 1926, T. S. became the first Eagle Scout in Noxubee County. His honor later was to be extended by the fact that his son and his grandson also became

Eagle Scouts. In 2008, his great grandson, Thomas Shelton Boggess V did earn the Eagle Scout award!

His father's research learned that though there were a few four generation Eagle Scouts in America, the Boggess four generations were the only four all alive at the same time! His father wrote U.S. President George W. Bush, a known admirer of the Boy Scout programs, about this unique situation of not only



four generations of Eagle Scouts being alive at once, all four had the same name! Thomas Shelton Boggess, Jr., III, IV & V. Later that year, President Bush planned for them to meet him at the airport in Phoenix, Arizona. The President greeting them, posed for photographs and sent autographed copies to each of them. After meeting with the President, the Secret Service Staff gave a tour for the Boggess family aboard Airforce 1, including lifting T. S. Boggess, Jr. up in his wheel chair!

T. S. was a dashing young man, handsome and bright. His logical mind had the beginnings of quality and sharpness, which would take him through a high caliber scientific pursuit of study. It stopped just short of a Ph. D, due to the Depression Yeas of the 1930's.

He initially registered at Mississippi State University. Shortly thereafter, he received a scholarship to Louisiana State University, from which he acquired both a bachelor's and a master's degree. He was a member of the Kappa Alpha fraternity. He worked at LSU Medical School toward a Ph. D in biochemistry.

The love of his life was Alice Loraine McElroy, born January 4, 1914. Born and raised in Ottumwa, Iowa, she entered college at Stephens College in Missouri. The following year, fortune smiled as she registered at LSU. She and T. S. met

on a blind date in romantic New Orleans. She was a gorgeous young lady, petite, and full of talent and creativity. Over the years, she excelled particularly in paintings, many, many of which grace the walls of family, friends and loved ones.

They married September 4, 1935 at the First Presbyterian Church of Ottumwa. Her only sibling, Margaret, was her maid of honor. Alice's parents were Ralph McElroy and Maude Heald, a hearty Midwestern family of Scottish descent. Ralph's career was to own and operate an insurance agency. He, too, was a dashing and handsome man, short in statue, but mighty in accomplishments. T. S. and Alice resided in New Orleans where he pursued his graduate work at LSU. The apartments, in which they lived on Carrollton Avenue, right on the streetcar line still stand today.

The years were difficult in the mid 1930's and staying in graduate school gave way to taking a position with the University of Georgia's Chemistry Department's Experiment Station in Griffin as a researcher in 1937. Their two children were born in Griffin, first Suzanne Margaret Boggess in 1938 and next Thomas Shelton Boggess, III in 1941. While there, T. S. was a charter member of the Kiwanis Club of Griffin.

The U. S. Department of Agriculture, Animal Science Division, transferred the family to Tifton, Georgia in 1942, a site where future President of the United States, Jimmy Carter trained in peanut farming in the late 1950's. Jimmy was too late to learn from T. S., and, no doubt, such faculty tutoring would have greatly enhanced even more the education for the future President.

During the World War II years, he volunteered for the Navy. However, the government valued his service more as a scientist and provided the incentive for him to remain at his work. He did join and did serve faithfully in the Georgia State Guard, receiving periodic training for military preparedness.

In 1947, the call and beckoning of the family farming enterprises in Noxubee County brought the family back to Mississippi. During those years, T. S. pursued farming, later the feed store business, taught animal science at East Mississippi Junior College, then turned his winsome personality and scientific knowledge to good use as a travelling marketer of clay pipe, with most of the customer base being municipalities. The family was active in the Macon First Baptist Church. Daughter Suzanne struck a musical reputation of singing, playing instruments, and was drum major for the high school band. Son Tommy was an industrious fellow, raising pigs, throwing a newspaper route from a motor scooter, and being an active athlete, especially in football. T. S. was a member of the Frith Lake Club, a local private social organization, which his father, Tom Boggess, started about 1920. It was in the secluded woods south of Macon, where the families gathered to have camp-outs and social events, such as picnics and even dancing! Alice made her place in Macon society and church work as a lady and a mother, pursued her painting, and nurturing their children to become the assets to society they did become. She was a charter member of the Dancing Rabbit Chapter of the Daughters of the American Revolution.

The call of academic inquiry again beckoned T. S. in 1958, and he resumed research at the University of Georgia Experiment Station in Griffin. Over the years, he published many articles in various publications of food service industry and academics.

They quickly refreshed their place in that community and society. Alice directed the Day School at the Griffin First Baptist Church for many years, and continued her painting activities. T. S. resumed membership in the Kiwanis Club, ultimately becoming its president. He directed the Spaulding County Fair several years, carrying on the type of county fair leadership already exhibited for three generations before him among the Boggess family members.

Tommy starred in football, and met his future bride in high school, Lindley Cheatham of the textile family producing the familiar label of Dundee Towels. Suzanne was entering her freshman year at Mississippi Southern University at Hattiesburg, Mississippi.

In 1969, the University of Georgia Chapter of the Agricultural Honor Society, Gamma Sigma Delta, granted him a certificate of service for his 15 years at the Experiment Station. He was a member of the Society of Sigma Xi, University of Georgia Chapter, which is dedicated to research and science.

The Boggess family made a significant impact on the Griffin community, and they developed many, many friends and loved ones. He was known through the area as a man of leadership and integrity. A wonderful send-off and recognition event was given upon the occasion of T. S.'s retirement in 1974. By this time, Tommy had married Lindley, producing Frances Barton Boggess and Thomas Shelton Boggess, IV. Tommy acquired his Doctor of Veterinary Medicine from the University of Georgia, and practices in Phoenix, Arizona. Lindley acquired her master's degree from the University of Georgia. Suzanne, during her first job after graduating from Mississippi Southern University as a medical technologist, met Dwight Albert (D. A.) Sharpe (this writer) in New Orleans. A Texas born fellow, D. A. was working in his first job after the University of Texas graduation. He was a sales representative for IBM Corporation. Their children were Taylor Marcus Sharpe, Tiffany Lenn Sharpe and Todd Wittman Sharpe. They lived in New Orleans, Saint Louis and Dallas, most of which time D. A. worked for various Christian organizations.

Retirement brought T. S. and Alice to reside at the Boggess family farm in Noxubee County, which T. S. had inherited in his father's estate in 1964. He took up the life of a gentleman farmer and socialite again. He raised registered cattle for a decade, and has always embellished the fields around the house with many nut bearing pecan trees and fruit trees bearing apples, peaches, plumbs, nectarines, etc. A hearty crop of vegetables often developed for their consumption and sharing with friends. He created a vineyard of Muscatine grapes, and his own winery, respecting the federal limits of production for private use.

He resumed membership and leadership in the <u>Frith Lake Club</u>. He revitalized it, much to the delight of many in Noxubee County. T. S. has the reputation of being one of the most graceful dancers on the Frith Lake dance floor, and he usually delights most of the ladies present with a round on the dance floor with the live band music.

They resumed membership in the Macon Baptist Church, though they took an ecumenical term being members of the Macon Presbyterian Church. However, they eventually returned to T. S.'s Baptist roots. He was later elected a Deacon. And, he honed his athletic skills as a serious golfer, playing with his many friends several times a week, where he is a member both Macon Country Club and the Macon Golf Club.

T. S. joined the Boggess Family Association around 1987, at the urging this writer, who had taken up the genealogy hobby about 1978. The Rotary Club of Macon in recent years has become a place for T. S. of community participation.

Alice was his stalwart partner and love for 58 married years. At all stages of her life, she reflected a beauty, which attracted the admiration of many. She was the element of success behind T. S., which made him the man that he was, loved and respected. She graduated and went to be with our Lord Jesus on Thanksgiving Day, 1994. She indeed was a special person in all the lives of our family and for many, many friends and loved ones.

The pinnacle of his service for the Boggess Family Association was taking on the hosting role for its 1999 national reunion conference. He arranged tours in some local areas of genealogical and historical interest for the conference attendees. A marvelous



fried catfish dinner for 75 was served under the beautifully shaded pecan trees in T. S.'s back yard. The group tasted his Muscatine wine that evening to the tune of 18 magnums! The following evening was a banquet at the Macon Country Club in full splendor. Ron Boggess and Bitsy Barr were the chairmen of this event, and oversaw a splendid program.

TS had a 90th birthday in 2002 and we had a big celebration. There was a fivepiece dance band and about 300 guests.

In September 2007, T. S. traveled on his own from his Mississippi farm to Griffin, Georgia to attend a retirees' honor banquet for staff members of the University of George from where he retired in 1975. His boundless energy kept him going up to his death at age 97!

Later in 2007, there was a Boggess family gathering in Edgewood, New Mexico at the home of his granddaughter, Frances and her husband, Andres, and their children Lindley, Rachel and Adela.





Close up to his death, T. S. still was having done some agricultural work including growing Muscatine grapes for that are used for the Bois d' Arc wine label. What is special about this label is that his grandson, Taylor Marcus Sharpe, designed the graphics for him.



Thomas Shelton Boggess, Jr. graduated to heaven on January 29, 2010. Learn more about him in the text we submitted to the local newspaper, the *Macon Beacon* for the February 3, 2010.

OBITUARY & Related Papers

And so, this concludes a biographical sketch of the marvelous and constructive life of Thomas Shelton Boggess, Jr., gentleman farmer, winemaker, socialite, historian and scientist. A man beloved and respected by many people from a broad range of places and stations in life. This writer is privileged to claim a place in his family. He was the very best father-in-law I ever could have had in the good Providence of God! His witness in life as a Christian man of God was always an assurance to me. It was my great honor to be his son-in-law.

Chapter 35 My Sister, Elizabeth Anne Sharpe Jumper

I was the baby in our family of three children. My two sisters were 10 and 12 years older than I. Elizabeth, the middle child, was the one who graduated to heaven in the shortest length of years among all three of us. She lived only 44 years (1929-1973).

Though Elizabeth Anne Sharpe was born August 9, 1929 in Little Rock, Arkansas, she based her claim of being a Texan on the fact that she was conceived while the family still resided in Texas (Laredo). She subsequently lived most her life in Texas as well.

Elizabeth's 1929 birth year was stormy. The big economic news was the famous Black Friday when, on October 28, the New York Stock Exchange plummeted by some \$26 billion in value of stocks owned by Americans. That



Elizabeth S. Jumper C Feb. 2, 1954 Austin, Texas

was the one event that painted the profiles by which citizens would live for the next decade. America had become the world's leading industrial producer, having a 34.4% of the world's production pie. Second place England come up with 10.4% and third place Germany with 10.3%. And 1929 was the year of Saint Valentine's Day Massacre in Chicago where gangland pundits machine-gunned each other on February 14.

Bell Laboratories began their experiments with color television in 1929, and Eastman-Kodak Company introduced 16 mm color movie film. It is sad that in early 2012, the 131-year old company filed of bankruptcy. George Eastman, the inventor after whom the Eastman-Kodak Company is named, is the sixth cousin, once removed to Elizabeth. His best-known invention was photographic film, and he did not have a negative attitude! Here is the <u>genealogical chart</u> from Eastman to me, which would be the same for Elizabeth. Our ancestor in common is famed Mayflower Passenger who arrived in America in 1620, Plymouth Colony Governor William Bradford. Bradford is my 6th great grandfather, and is Eastman's 5th great grandfather.

The popular songs of 1929 were "Stardust," "Tiptoe Through the Tulips" [yes, that song pre-dates Tinny Tim!], and "Singing in the Rain." "Walt Disney's Mickey Mouse cartoon films that year effectively killed off any further business for the outdated silent movies. Ernest Hemingway published "A Farewell to Arms." Actress Audrey Hepburn was born in England. Frenchman Erich Maria Remarque wrote "All Quiet on the Western Front." And Albert B. Fall, the Secretary of the Interior under Calvin Coolidge, was convicted of accepting a \$100,000 bribe from Edward L. Dohemy in the famous Teapot Dome scandal. He was sentenced to one-year in prison and fined \$100,000. Some say that's where the term "fall guy" is derived?

Source: Time Tables of History, Bernard Brun, pages 496-499

Spending most of her life in Texas, she was strong to assert her Texan heritage. Even though she was born shortly after her family moved to Little Rock, Arkansas, the fact that she obviously was conceived while the family still lived in Texas allowed her to claim to be a Texan! She is a fifth-generation Texan, her great, great grandfather, Judge Felix Benedict Dixon, having come to San Augustine County, Texas by 1841. Her growing-up years were in Little Rock, then back to Texas in Ballinger, then in Houston.



This Christmas photograph shows Elizabeth on the right. Our grandfather, Henry (Harry) Seth Sharpe (Papa Sharpe), is seated beside her. I have no explanation

why our grandmother, Mama Sharpe, was not present. She died in 1944, but seemingly could have been present here. Perhaps she could have snapped the camera?

When she was young, Elizabeth was known in the family as Betty or Betty Anne. I believe it was during college age years that she began using the more formal Elizabeth.

I remember the family laughingly re-telling a story about Elizabeth when she was very young, before my birth, wherein Daddy had given the girls a pair of baby rabbits for an Easter present. The cute thing about the story was the quotation coming from Elizabeth saying, "Ain't the 'lil yabbitt toot?"

Another anecdotal item about Elizabeth was about her Home Economics class in Junior High. Yes, back in those days, schools taught girls skills often found in kitchens and in management of households. Upon beginning the part of the curriculum having to do with cooking, the class was asked to write any cooking recipes that one of them already knew. Betty Anne's recipe had to do with making toast by putting it in the lower oven, where it could be heated from overhead. The process outlined included the instruction at the end of taking a knife and scraping the toast! The funny part about it was that the toast should not be burned, but her experience at our home was that very often the toast was burned, so it was regular to need to scrape off the charcoaled character of the burnt toast!

Of my two sisters, Elizabeth was the more athletic. She played basketball in college and was good at throwing a baseball (hardball). I remember her fondly as she spent time with me, just throwing a baseball back and forth in our long driveway! One day, when she was about age 17 and I was 7, a baseball she'd thrown to me glanced off to the side, going under a porch step on our church, which was across the driveway from our home. I was reluctant to crawl under the building in that dark to get the ball.

So, problem solver that she was, Elizabeth wedged herself under the step to go after it. The problem was that she became stuck there, and could not back out. In my somewhat weaker state, I could not pull her out. So, what did I do? I just refused to confront the problem, and I went into the house, not telling anybody that Elizabeth was stuck under the church! Fortunately, my father came home soon. Driving up the driveway, he spotted his daughter's legs protruding out from under the church. Of course, he extracted her successfully, but she was not happy with me. When Daddy found out it was because of my abandonment, I was in trouble for punishment!



This is Elizabeth about the time she graduated from high school, circa 1946. It is on our front porch at 6919 Sherman Avenue, Houston, TX.

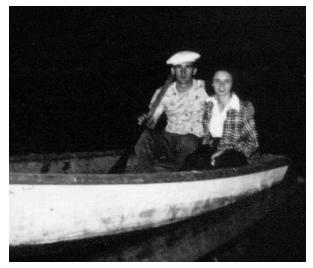
She graduated from <u>San Jacinto High School</u> in Houston as Valedictorian of her class in 1945. This was a very large student body high school near downtown Houston. It was named after the name of the near-by battlefield where the independence finally was won for Texas from Mexico, to become the Republic of Texas in 1836.

Both my sisters were active in the student fellowship at our Central Park Presbyterian Church, and our mother was an adult sponsor of the high school and college age group.

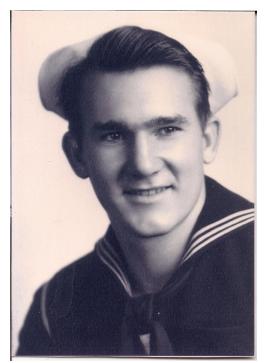
What I remember most about those groups were the summer trips we took to the Texas Gulf Coast island of Galveston. We'd spend the day on the beach and the evening at the night-life and carnival rides after that. They were fond memories. I especially remember the thrills riding the roller coasters! I was in the 6 to 8-year age when these things took place.

Elizabeth entered <u>Rice Institute</u> in Houston (now named Rice University), following her sister. Having two children in our family to gain entrance at Rice was an accomplishment and an honor for the Sharpe family. The entrance requirements were and have always been very high. The academic reputation in Texas of Rice Institute was like the Harvard of Texas!

Her musical talent included being an organist for the church where her father was Pastor, Central Presbyterian Church, 6914 Sherman Avenue, Houston, Texas. This was down in the industrial east end of Houston, near the Houston Ship Channel. One Sunday night when Elizabeth was a freshman at Rice Institute, a Coast Guard sailor visited the service with his roommate. That Coast Guardsman spotted Elizabeth playing the organ and the other sailor spotted a young lady in the choir. They both boasted to each other that they would marry these girls! What is fun is that they both did marry them later. The story is that Andy asked to walk Elizabeth home that night after the service [lots of folks did not have cars in those days]. She laughed at the question, but willingly went with him.



Unbeknownst to him, the manse (our home) was just right next door to the church, just a few feet away from where he asked her!



Andy was a Mississippi boy, so after their marriage, each finished their college education at the University of Mississippi in Oxford. She graduated in 1950 and he in 1951. Elizabeth worked much of the time in various administrative and secretarial positions. She was an excellent typist! Her husband also was a trained typist. The United States government's G.I. Bill for military experienced people assisted both in getting their college degrees.

Like her mother, Elizabeth did well serving the role of a Presbyterian Pastor's wife. Her educated experience allowed her to be a counselor and advisor to her husband in the things of ministry and of life. The first church where Andy was pastor was Christ Church in Houston, Texas. Later, they moved to West Shore Presbyterian Church, Dallas, Texas. These were years in the 1950s when my father was Pastor of John Knox Presbyterian Church in Dallas, as well. It was nice to have two family households in the same city.

Andy served as Pastor at the <u>First Presbyterian Church</u> in Lubbock, Texas 1962-1970. It was during those years that both had renewal spiritual experiences, learning more about the power of the Holy Spirit and speaking in tongues. These were sweet years for them and they continued to mature in their spirituality. They were introduced to these things through a neighborhood Bible study they attended, led by some Episcopal lay people. Jack and Shelly Hall were especially instrumental in this and became very close personal friends with Elizabeth and Andy. The Hall's family was the one that started and owned the <u>Furr Cafeterias</u> operating several places in Texas, but headquartered in Lubbock.

Elizabeth contracted cancer circa 1970, while they lived in Lubbock. Later that year, the family moved to Saint Louis, Missouri, where Andy received a call to be Pastor of the <u>Central Presbyterian Church in Clayton</u>. She died just after Christmas in 1973 at age 44. The hospital where she died was in the city of Saint Louis, but the family lived out in the County of Saint Louis. That's one of those strange situations where the city is of independent status, and is not under the jurisdiction of a county. The story goes that the people residing out in Saint Louis County were alienated enough from the bad government leadership in the City of Saint Louis that the County people voted to separate from the city jurisdiction!

Her funeral was to be December 30, but ten inches of snow fell the evening before. Finally, a few days after New Year's Day, the family put her to rest. The church was filled to overflowing. The graveside service for the family and close friends was very cold, with much of that snow still on the ground and the windblown temperature in the teen's.



Though I was thoughtfully prayerful at the graveside service of my sister, I believe that my fervent prayers included completing the service more quickly, so we could get back into a warm car! It was bone-chilling cold like about 15 degrees with breeze blowing!

Elizabeth and Andy gave birth to four wonderful children: Mark Andrew Jumper (1954), Peter Sharpe Jumper (1956), Kathryn (Kathy) Elizabeth Jumper Carlton (1958) and Carol Anne Jumper Robertson (1960). Though she was never privileged to see any grandchildren, her children here gave birth to children as follows: Mark – 7; Peter – 2; Kathy – 2; and Carol – 2. Elizabeth and Andy were married for just over 25 years.



In loving memory of our daughter Elixobeth who beft us for a white at the call of our Heavenly Father December 28, 1973. "A good wife who can find? She is far more precious than jewels,"--Prov. 31:10 Sincerely, Dwight and Martha Sharpe Some weeks following her graveside service, a permanent gravestone was erected. It simply stated her birth and death dates, and her name as Elizabeth Ann Jumper.

Some family members had thought it would have been good to include her Sharpe maiden name, and the unfortunate thing is that her middle name is spelled "Anne," rather than, "Ann" that is on the gravestone. I do not know why it was not noticed and correction requested. I did not notice it till some years later.

Elizabeth was a credit to her family. A

devoted mother and wife, she lived life to the fullest and with the most detail. She was a swell sister as well. She was a credit to our family and heritage, making us all pleased and blessed to be in relationship with this fine Christian woman!

Chapter 36 My Sister, Martha de Noailles Sharpe Ehlers



Martha de Noailles Sharpe was born September 7, 1927. She is the elder of my two sisters, the only siblings of mine. The 1927 year of Martha's birth was a whirlwind year for the nation. Frank Billings Kellogg, U.S. Secretary of State, proposed a pact for reunification of the world powers to conclude the loose strings remaining from World War I. It was finally agreed to the following year and became known as the Kellogg-Briand Pact. His accomplishments with that pact earned him the 1929 Nobel Peace Prize. Frank is Martha's sixth cousin, twice removed. The photo is of Martha in 1986, when she was age 59.

It also was the year Ernest Hemingway wrote his "Men without Women" short stories, Franz Kafka wrote "Amerika," Upton Sinclair wrote "Oil" and Sinclair Lewis wrote "Elmer Gantry." The theater world was stunned with the first talkie movie, "The Jazz Singer," that stared Al Jolson. That exciting introduction to audio thrill began with the curtain raising to an empty dark screen, the audience embracing a stillness of silence, which was shattered with the golden-throated voice of Al Jolson saying from behind the blank screen, "You ain't heard nothing yet!"

For the musical lovers, Jerome Kern and Oscar Hammerstein II wrote "Show Boat" that year. Richard Rodgers and Lorenz Hart wrote "A Connecticut Yankee." The popular songs for 1927 were "Old Man River," "My Blue Heaven," "Let a Smile Be Your Umbrella" and "Blue Skies."

Charles Lindbergh flew into the history books of eternity with his non-stop trans-Atlantic flight to France.

Source: "Time Tables of History," Bernard Grun, pages 490-493

On the very day of Martha's birth, TV pioneer Philo T. Farnsworth succeeded in transmitting an image through purely electronic means by using a device called an image dissector.

Source: http://www.nytimes.com/learning/general/onthisday/20040907.html?th

Martha was born on the 394th birthday of English Queen Elizabeth I, daughter of King Henry VIII and his second of six wives, Anne Boleyn. Martha's sister was Elizabeth Anne. Anne Boleyn's sister, Mary, married William Cary, who would be Elizabeth's uncle. William Cary is Martha's 20th cousin, 13 times removed on our mother's side of the family.

Martha, Elizabeth and I have family relationships to English Monarchs. Such connections over a 1,400+ year term is illustrated in this <u>chart</u>.

On our father's side, William Cary is the seventh cousin, five times removed of Edward Southworth, the first husband of Alice Carpenter, Martha's seventh great grandmother on our father's side. Alice's second husband was of historical significance, being <u>William Bradford</u>, the Governor of Plymouth Colony in the New World for 33 of the first 35 years after their 1620 arrival on the Mayflower.

William Bradford is the second great grandfather of Herbert Pelham, the very first Treasurer of Harvard College in the English Colonies about 1643.

Martha was born in Laredo, Texas where her father was in his first pastorate as a Presbyterian Minister. It was the First Presbyterian Church.

Martha's middle name, de Noailles, is a strangely beautiful French middle name found in this very non-French family. The source of it is a mystery. However, oral tradition has it that the name was taken from a friend of the family. The name appears as the middle name for Martha's grandmother, Mattie de Noailles Simons Sharpe, as well as in her second great grandmother, Anastasia (Fannie) de Noailles Lafayette Hewlett. If the friend of the family story is correct, the friend was probably that of the parents of Fannie, who were Lemuel Green Hewlett and Rebecca Martha's middle name, de Noailles, is a strangely beautiful French middle name found in this very non-French family. The source of it is a mystery. However, oral tradition has it that the name was taken from a friend of the family. The name appears as the middle name for Martha's grandmother, Mattie de Noailles Simons Sharpe, as well as in her second great grandmother, Anastasia (Fannie) de Noailles Lafayette Hewlett. If the friend of the family story is correct, the friend was probably J. Harvey, the parents living in Hopkins County, Kentucky at the time of the birth of Anastasia de Noailles Lafayette Hewlett (Fannie) and all her six siblings.

Before Martha was three, the family moved to Little Rock, Arkansas in1929. Her father's call to his third pastorate (he was a Presbyterian pastor) was to Ballinger, Texas, 1935. These were the depths of the depression days of the economy in the United States, yet God's providence continued to give adequate sustenance for the family, including having a maid to help with the children and domestic chores of the home and for what was expected of a pastor's home.

By 1941, when the children were three in number, the family moved to Houston, Texas. From then on, the family did not have domestic help in the home. Martha fared well in school, graduating from <u>San Jacinto High School</u> as Magna Cum Laude in 1944. Her academic acumen and academic record brought her entrance to Rice Institute, a school of great renown in academics, later renamed <u>Rice University</u>. After a year at Rice, her desire to branch out in life led her to the <u>University of Texas at Austin</u>, the school from which both of her parents had graduated in 1926.

It was at Austin that Martha met Victor Marcus Ehlers, Jr. in the context of activities at the Westminster Student Fellowship at the <u>University</u> <u>Presbyterian Church</u>. Vic had completed military service in World War II. The young couple wanted to marry and get on with life, even before graduation, which they did. What brought me, Martha's little brother, to accepting Vic onto the scene dating her was his bright shiny Ford Coupe convertible! Boy, was it classy. Once he offered a free ride to me around the neighborhood, I thought he was a fine friend for my sister! Martha was a member of the Phi Mu Sorority Alumnae and participated in its alumni activities much of her life.

A fun fact to know is that years later, their younger of their two children, Nancy, went to Austin Presbyterian Theological Seminary (from where her grandfather, my father, graduated), and she was ordained as a Presbyterian Minister, serving at that same University Presbyterian Church where her parents had met years earlier! Martha was a life-long Presbyterian, serving in later years as an ordained Elder. She participated in her church's life wherever she lived, such as in Sunday School, Presbyterian Women's organizations, etc. She was a member of the Mothers' Club of Alpha Delta Pi and Alpha Gamma Delta Sororities, and served on the Panhellenic Council. Her love for history was fulfilled somewhat in her activities as a Docent at the LBJ Presidential Library in Austin (named for U.S. President Lyndon Baines Johnson, a Texan native).

Martha enjoyed domestic engineering, raising her two daughters, both of whom were very talented girls.

Martha was widowed for about seventeen years. She experienced dementia, and coming to live with Nancy's family was necessitated. They lovingly took care of her through the home and through several institutions. She lived back home for much of the last year of her life, though it may have been a couple of years since family members had exchanged meaningful conversation. One thing the family did learn was the singing of old time hymns brought a response of seeming gratitude and recognition to her, and so we sang a lot for Martha. She could not be aware that her daughter, Lynne, succumbed from cancer three months before Martha died.

Her last few years were spent home-based in the residence of her daughter, Nancy and her family. The Reeves family were so generous in providing an apartment built into their home. Their care was so meaningful to Martha and to the rest of us in the family. They lived in Williamson County, the next county north of Austin, Travis County, Texas, where Martha and Vic had raised their family There was a closeness there.

Martha died January 17, 2002. Her going home service January 25, 2002 was a celebration of a Christian life with many family and friends together. The woman conducting the service, the Rev. Ms. Kelly Chadwick, was a family friend. I gave a eulogy about Martha. The service was held at the Weed-Corley-Fish Funeral Home in Austin. Her burial was at the Austin Memorial Park, Austin, Travis County, Texas. Our first cousin, Harry Franklin Sharpe of Georgetown, Williamson County, Texas, attended the services.

Chapter 37 My Wealthy New York Relative, Willis Sharpe Kilmer

<u>Willis Sharpe Kilmer</u> is my half second cousin, once removed. Our ancestor in common is John Elsefer Sharp, Willis' great grandfather and my great, great grandfather. Willis is descended through John and his first wife, Eve Markle. I am descended through John and his second wife, Elizabeth Bodine.



Willis Sharpe Kilmer was born October 18, 1868 in Brooklyn, New York. His family moved to Binghamton, New York in 1878 where he lived the rest of his life, which ended in 1941.

Willis Sharpe Kilmer was born on the first anniversary of the United States' acquisition of Alaska from Russia. He was born in the year that the <u>Great Train Robbery</u> took place near Marshfield, Indiana, as seven members of the Reno gang made off with \$96,000 in cash, gold and bonds. "Binghamton is a <u>city</u> in the <u>Southern Tier</u> of <u>New York</u> in the <u>United</u> <u>States</u>. It is near the <u>Pennsylvania</u> border, in a bowl-shaped valley at the confluence of the <u>Susquehanna</u> and <u>Chenango</u> Rivers. Binghamton is the <u>county seat</u> of <u>Broome County</u> and is the principal city and cultural center of the <u>Greater Binghamton</u> metropolitan area (also known as the <u>Triple Cities</u>), home to a quarter million people. The population of the city itself, according to the <u>2010 census</u>, is 47,376.

"The city was named after <u>William Bingham</u>, a wealthy Philadelphian who bought the surrounding land in 1792. Before that, the first known people of European descent to come to the area were the troops of the <u>Sullivan Expedition</u> in 1779, during the <u>American</u> <u>Revolutionary War</u>.

"The community was first settled around 1802 at the junction of the Susquehanna and Chenango rivers and was known as Chenango Point. Binghamton was first incorporated in 1834 as a <u>village</u> of the <u>Town of Binghamton</u>. Binghamton became a city in 1867. Abel Bennett, who was elected as secretary on January 30, 1845 of the Pennsylvania Coal Company, was the city's first mayor. His extensive property on the city's west side is known as the <u>Abel</u> Bennett Tract."*

*http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Binghamton,_New_York

The Cleveland (Ohio) Plain Dealer newspaper article by Dan Parker in the Sunday, December 8, 1946 issue provides very interesting information on Willis Sharpe Kilmer, published some six years after his death. The heading claimed, "Everything the Patent Medicine King Touched Turned to Gold -Even Horse Racing." He was known to have amassed a \$10 million plus fortune, mostly on a cure-all patent medicine known as <u>Swamp Root</u>, but also in newspaper publishing, real estate development and horse racing.





The greatest medicine he gave the public was what was considered a bag of horse bones named <u>Exterminator</u>, the winner of the Kentucky Derby on May 11, 1918 in a field of eight contenders. The jockey riding the winner was William Knapp, the breeder was F. D Knight and the trainer was Henry

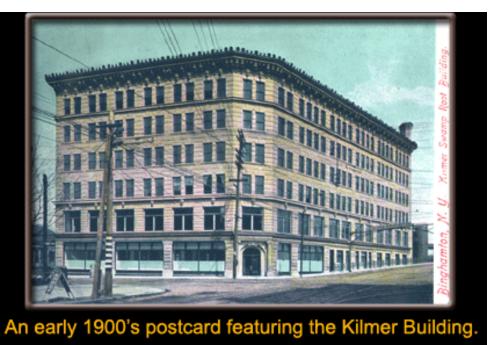
McDaniel. In 1928, Willis was the breeder for the winner of the Kentucky Derby, <u>Reigh Count</u>. That horse was ridded by jockey Charlie Lang, trained by Bert Mitchell, and owned by Mrs. John D. Hertz. That same year, Reigh Count was voted the <u>American Award</u> for Horse of the Year. Also in that 1928 Derby, Willis owned the 11th place horse out of 22 running, <u>Sun Beau</u>. The rider was jockey John Craigmyle and the trainer was Charles W. Carroll. Willis, of course, was the breeder as well. This horse racing information came from an Internet search on Willis' name.

Another major source of the Kilmer family wealth under the leadership of Willis was vast elements of real estate development. He built the first sky scrapper in Binghamton, New York, a towering six stories high! It was the <u>Kilmer Building, 141 Chenango Street</u>, built in 1903, which was originally used as the home of the Kilmer product, Swamp Root. It was at the corner of Chenango and Lewis Streets. "When you step off the railroad train, the Swamp-Root laboratory is the first striking object that confronts you - a beautiful, white, hightowering building." This description of a first impression on arriving in Binghamton and seeing the Kilmer Building, appeared in a 1917 issue of <u>New York Sunday World</u>. The article continued: "In many respects this building stands unique. The main office is wholly unlike anything of the kind in the country. The massive columns of solid marble and beautiful hand-carved molding, cornices and ceiling, and the marble mosaic floor, is of a type that forces admiration."*

The Kilmer Building is an ornate, six-story brick and stone block faceted, 72,000 square foot building. It is located in the central Binghamton business district.

The bulding was bult in 1903 for Jonas Kilmer as home of Dr. Kilmer & Company, manufacturers of "Swamp Root". Swamp Root was a late 19th century patent medicine. Jonas and son, Willis Sharpe Kilmer played prominent roles in the development of Binghamton.

The Kilmer Building features a marble foyer, grand lobby and mahogany executive offices. It is a local landmark listed on the State and National Registers of Historic Places.



Even in 2010 when the Kilmer Building was undergoing renovation (there have been several owners over the years), the project head was quoted as saying about the Kilmer Building that it is "one of the last riveted steel buildings made, and will probably be here for another 500 years."

http://nyslandmarks.com/treasures/07sep.htm

About 1914, Kilmer brought <u>Alfred</u> (Fred) Lansing Sharpe up from Texas to manage his buildings. Fred is a first cousin to Willis' mother, Julia Sharpe Kilmer. In 1904, Fred was the first Republican elected to a state office in Texas, following the Days of Reconstruction, Post War Between the States. In 1916, Fred's life ended with a selfinflicted gunshot wound, following an argument and shooting of Fred's daughter, Holland. She survived.



He generally was referred to by his full name of Willis Sharpe Kilmer, with the emphasis on the middle name. This not only accounted for the strong heritage of his Mother, but a general acknowledgement about the acumen he was perceived to possess. This reflected his success in the four wildly divergent endeavors he pursued, medicine, publishing, real estate development and horse racing.

Kilmer was age ten when the family moved to Binghamton. His father obtained an interest in the proprietary medicine business owned by <u>Dr. S. Andral Kilmer</u>, Willis' uncle. Their product, Swamp Root, was reputed to be a cure-all for kidney, liver and bladder ailments. During those years, the business was mostly in and around Binghamton.

This all changed when Willis returned home from his <u>Cornell</u> <u>University</u> education in marketing. His first step was to insert advertisements in small newspapers all over the country. It was one of the first national advertising campaigns in the country, a bold act which almost drove the small company into bankruptcy. However, sales gradually increased into a steady stream of growing and significant business.

All went well with the Kilmers, until the turn of the century, when newspapers and magazines began to attack patent medicine firms which made extravagant claims for their products. Swamp Root, the maiden aunt's favorite beverage when she wanted to get a "glow" without losing her membership in the <u>Women's Christian</u> <u>Temperance Union</u>, was as high on the list of nostrums under fire, as it was in alcoholic content - 12%.

The result of the campaign against the medicine makers was to bring about stricter regulatory laws. By this time, young Kilmer, now in control of the company, had come to regard the City of Binghamton as his feudal estate. Many of the townsfolk worked for him, and the Kilmer wealth had a powerful influence on the local politics.

Kilmer was a big, impressive looking man, six feet one inch tall, weighing 215 pounds and crowned with a shock of iron gray hair, which later turned pure while (that's a description of me today, except I'm not quite all white hair yet). Under beetling eyebrows, he had a pair of piercing blue-gray eyes which turned dark whenever he was challenged. An immaculate dresser, he always carried a cane as his scepter of office as Baron of Binghamton. If common folk weren't frightened or at least awed by all these props, there was the Baron's deep, booming voice to keep them in line.

More extensive light is shown in the following material taken from <u>Seward's History of Binghamton and Broome County</u>, pages 148-149. I've paraphrased it for you. Swamp Root is still available on the market today, and I purchased four bottles recently at over \$5 each for the four ounce bottles! I notice it is 10% alcohol, which I assume adds to its attractiveness.

In 2004, I was phoned by Steven Palmatier, who lived in Greene, New York, near the Binghamton area. We planned to compare some information he has. Steven is the grandson of a man who was an employee of Willis Sharpe Kilmer, and a distant relative of Willis. I am indebted to Steven for sharing much of his Willis Sharpe Kilmer files, which has enabled me to enhance greatly this report on Mr. Kilmer. Unfortunately, <u>Steven Palmatier died October 24, 2016</u>, so that door was closed to me then.

Steven told me that Willis died while at his country estate, Sky Lake, outside of Windsor, New York. It is now a Methodist Camp (conference meeting grounds). Kilmer also was a founding member of the Binghamton Country Club, being an admirer of the sport of playing golf.

There is a very interesting source on the Internet giving a narrative about Willis Sharpe Kilmer, by a Mr. John E. Golley, (e-mail: ByGolley@email.msn.com) at the web site address:

http://www.antiquebottles.com/kilmer.html

Below is an excerpt:

"Willis Sharpe Kilmer was born in Brooklyn, New York on October 18,1869. He graduated from Cornell University in 1880, and went to work in the family business. Willis was put in charge of the advertising department of Dr. Kilmer and Company, which lead to a swift increase in business. Advertising in the late 1800's was not the "science" that it is today, and Willis Sharpe Kilmer was one of advertising's earliest pioneers. His first wife was Beatrice Richardson who's socially prominent father was one of the brightest executives in a fledgling newspaper advertising agency in New York City. Willis Kilmer had a more metropolitan upbringing than many of his peers, and his relationship with Mr. Richardson and his family connections all helped benefit Willis and his new ideas. Dr. Kilmer and Company utilized all the forms of advertising of the day, including painted wooden signs, posters and printed circulars, but with the entrance of Willis' leadership, began purchasing advertisement space in newspapers, expounding the virtues of their numerous cures. They were amongst the fore-runners in printing Almanacs, which not only would list the normal items, such as moon phases, best planting times and the like, but at every turn of the page, listed one or more of the products, printed testimonials for the same and helped diagnose 'ailments' of which one of their products would 'cure.'

"The packaging of their products was also easily noticed on the shelf. For ease of finding the correct cure, their Heart Remedy had an embossed heart on it, Swamp Root Kidney Cure had a kidney embossed on it and so forth, and their packaging was bright orange, with the likeness of a whiskered Dr. S. Andral Kilmer, printed boldly on the front. The package also invited customers to write to Dr. Kilmer for advice and prescription, which, long after Dr. S. Andral Kilmer had sold his share of the business, caused Dr. Kilmer to initiate a lawsuit against his brother and nephew in which he accused Dr. Kilmer and Company of representing him as the physician in charge of their medical department. He contended that they pretended to give medical advice and prescribe medicines for diseases which they pretended to diagnose. When a lower court ruled against Dr. Kilmer and Company, Willis pursued the suit in The Appellate Court, and in 1917, the decision against the company was reversed. It was Willis Sharpe Kilmer's advertising prowess, as well as his 'muscle' via political and professional contacts, that made Swamp Root a household word. When other patent medicines were losing popularity, due to The Pure Food and Drug Act, as well as an increased respect for medical science, Swamp Root was still filling the Kilmer coffers. When asked what Swamp Root was good for, Willis Kilmer once replied, 'About a million dollars a year!'

"Patent medicine wasn't the only thing in which Willis Sharp Kilmer was involved. On April 11, 1904, Mr. Kilmer founded *The Binghamton Press*, which became a very well-respected newspaper in the country. It has been alleged, although never proven, that he started the newspaper for putting *The Binghamton Evening Herald* out of business, and he also could control the advertising of various patent medicines and any articles condemning the same. There were several people, such as Samuel Hopkins Adams, who were very much against patent medicines, and were lobbying very hard for the passage of The Pure Food and Drug Act. Mr. Kilmer was very successful in 'squashing their stories, and did eventually put *The Evening Herald*, run by his long-time personal and political enemy Guy Beardsley, out of business. Mr. Beardsley later sued Willis Sharpe Kilmer, charging conspiracy to put him out of business; Beardsley lost the suit.



"Willis Sharpe Kilmer was also a very fine judge of horses. The family mansion is still located on <u>Riverside</u> <u>Drive in Binghamton</u>, and on the surrounding grounds, Mr. Kilmer built Sun Briar Court, which had a 1/5-mile indoor track, an outdoor track connected to a halfmile circular track, 100 fire-

proof stalls, and the main stable, included offices, quarters and a clubhouse. The Kilmer racing colors were brown, green and orange. He owned many fine horses; Genie, the son of Man O'War, Sun Briar, Sun Beau and Exterminator, which won the 1918 Kentucky Derby, and was the leading money winner for four straight seasons. Sun Beau held the American record for money won, until Sea Biscuit broke the record in 1939.

Mr. Kilmer owned a large estate on the Rappahannock River in Virginia known as Remlik (Kilmer spelled backwards), as well as a game preserve near Binghamton, called Sky Lake. He was a pioneer in forest and game preservation in New York as well as in Virginia. He established the Kilmer Pathological Laboratory in Binghamton, and started Binghamton's first nine-hole golf course, which later became the Binghamton Country Club.

An interesting story is available here about the <u>USS Remlik and the</u> <u>Metal of Honor</u>! Remilik is Kilmer, spelled backwards. "Willis Sharpe Kilmer died of pneumonia on July 12, 1940, leaving an



estate estimated at \$10 to \$15 million dollars, and is interred in the family mausoleum in Floral Park Cemetery in Binghamton, New York.

"After World War II, his second wife, Sarah Jane Wells, sold the rights to make and manufacture Swamp Root to Medtech Laboratories of Cody, Wyoming. The six-story Kilmer Building, built in 1903 after the original

building was damaged by fire, still stands at 141 Chenango Street, and Swamp Root was still on the shelves of the E. C. McKallor Drug Company in Binghamton in 1983. It can still be ordered today, more than almost 120 years after it was first produced, a testament to the advertising skill of Willis Sharpe Kilmer and the strength of the Kilmer name and reputation."

About in 1994, Steven Palmatier loaned me a paper-bound book, well over 100 pages long, that used as the catalog for cautioning off the race horse stock of Willis' estate on October 30, 1940 at the Farm, Court Manor, near New Market, Virginia. The elaborate book gave the schedule for the day, including lunch, displayed an inventory of all the stallions, weanlings, and brood mares, had an individual page devoted for the genealogy and pedigree of each of the 102 horses being sold, including photographs some of them, and a table showing the house race winnings of Kilmer annually, totaling \$3,919,519 for the previous 18 years. This, of course was not all his winnings, for we know he owned a Kentucky Derby winner in 1918. This table of winnings begins at 1922. The book states that Kilmer's horses had won over 220 races in 1940 alone. The Forward in the book thoroughly establishes the preeminence of Willis Sharpe Kilmer in the world of thoroughbred horse racing.

<u>Here is a web site that gives a history for Exterminator</u>, who it shows won over a quarter of a million dollars in his races:

Bingham was an interesting town. "Located in the Southern Tier of New York state where the Susquehanna and Chenango rivers meet, the city is the birthplace of International Business Machines, better known as IBM. Also, birthed in Bingham were Endicott-Johnson Shoes and the Link Co., which developed flight training simulators. Binghamton is home to cartoonist Johnny Hart, creator of "B.C." and "Wizard of Id." Also, born there: TV producer and 'The Twilight Zone' creator Rod Serling.

As an aside, IBM was my employer in 1957-58 half time as a college student in <u>Austin College, Sherman, TX</u>, and full time from 1962-1969. Those employments were in Sherman, TX and in New Orleans, Louisiana. That is where I met my wife to be, Suzanne Margaret Boggess.

Willis Sharpe Kilmer, not only is an extraordinarily interesting historical man, he is a primary reason which led me into the interesting pursuit of genealogy and the learning more extensively about my family ancestry and heritage.

It started about 1978 with my brother-in-law, Victor (Vic) Marcus Ehlers, Jr. (1923-1985). My father, Dwight Alfred Sharpe (1901-1981) had mentioned to him something about potentially being heir to a portion of a significant state. He mentioned Maybelle Alberta Sharpe (1883-1973), his first cousin, as someone who had tracked the information on this estate. Vic was able to contact the daughter of Maybelle Alberta Sharpe; whose name was Alberta Killie (who was my second cousin). She passed on information about the estate of Willis Sharpe Kilmer.

In my files is a PDF copy of the Bingham Press issue of Tuesday, February 20, 1945, page 15 (7th column from the left, toward the bottom, the first item in the "Legal Notices" section). Since Willis Sharpe Kilmer died without ever giving issue to any children, his estate was left to his lateral relatives alive at the time, with his widow given the privilege to enjoy the estate throughout her lifetime before distribution was made to the lateral relatives. The notice listed all of what the attorneys at the time understood were the legal lateral relatives. My father, Dwight Alfred Sharpe is one of them listed, and we believed his share would have been a little over 16% of the estate.

A reality affecting greatly the administration of this estate is the fact that when Willis married his second wife, to whom he was married at his death, she was a very young woman. At the time of their marriage about 1920, he was age 62 and Sarah Jane Emily Wells was age 24. Additionally, Sarah Jane lived to the age of 81, not dying until 1985.

Upon her death, there became a realization among some potential heirs that the will had a vagueness that ultimately would interpretation by the courts. The idea about the estate going to his living lateral relatives alive at his death would dictate who would be eligible to inherit from the estate. The vagueness was that stipulation existed: Would it be the lateral relatives alive at the time of his death OR the time of her death! Willis died in 1940 and Sarah Jane died in 1985! Quite a few relatives died during those 45 years! Through Maybelle Alberta Sharpe's estimation, my father would be in line to receive about 1/6th of the estate, if interpreted as those relatives living at Willis' death.

Here is a copy of the <u>court plea in the Matter of Kilmer</u>. These plaintiffs did prevail in the court proceedings.

However, since my father died in 1981 and Sarah Jane died in 1985, the court's decision, among other things, would dictate whether my father would receive anything at all, which would trickle down to his descendants. As it turned out, the court decided in favor of the relatives pressing for the interpretation being those alive at the time of her death. So, my father was eliminated from possible distribution.

The value of the estate was never publicized, either at the probation of Willis' will, nor at the occasion of Sarah Jane's death, which concluded Willis' will. However, outside estimates, by newspaper articles and others, placed the estate's value between 10 and 15 million dollars! With prudent investment, even with Sarah Jane's living expenses taken out, surely by 1985 the estate was quite a large sum!

Chapter 38 Our Family's Two Nobel Peace Prize Winners

The Nobel Prize is a set of annual international awards bestowed in several categories by Swedish and Norwegian institutions, in recognition of academic, cultural and/or scientific advances. The will of Swedish inventor <u>Alfred Nobel</u> established the prizes in 1895. His best-known invention was that of dynamite! As of 2016, the <u>Nobel Peace Prize</u> has been awarded to 104 individuals and to 23 organizations.

Each prize's financial worth is about \$1,500,000+ in today's US currency. The Nobel Prize is widely regarded as the most prestigious award available in the fields of literature, medicine, physics, chemistry, peace and economics.

The <u>Royal Swedish Academy of Sciences</u> awards the Nobel Prize in Chemistry and the Nobel Prize in Economic Sciences. The <u>Nobel Assembly at Karolinska</u> Institutet awards the Nobel Prize in Physiology or Medicine. The <u>Swedish</u> <u>Academy</u> grants the Nobel Prize in Literature. The Nobel Peace Prize is awarded not by a Swedish organization, but by the Norwegian Nobel Committee.

Except for the Nobel Peace Prize, the awards are presented in Stockholm, Sweden on December 10, the anniversary of Nobel's death. Peace Prize are presented in Oslo, Norway, usually on December 10 as well.

The Peace Prize banquet at the <u>Oslo Grand Hotel</u>. Guests include the President of the Storting (Norweigh's Congress or National Legislative body), and the King and Queen of Norway. About 250 guests attend.

The governance of the Nobel Foundation, request each winner to give a public lecture on a subject related to their major prize. They are given a Nobel Prize Metal in gold. Winners receive a diploma directly from the hands of the King of Sweden, or, in the case of the Peace Prize, from the Chairman of the Norwegian Nobel Committee.

The Peace Prize awards have included controversy, with charges of political orientation being alleged in the selections. You can browse the list of winners for yourself, and conjecture which ones were controversial! I believe that two of the Nobel Peace Prizes that were related to our family members were not controversial.

There are two Nobel Prize Award winners who have relationships to our family, for which we can be pleased with such associations.

In 1906, <u>U. S. President Theodore Roosevelt</u> was awarded the Nobel Peace Prize, having negotiated peace in the <u>Russo-Japanese War</u> in 1904-5. He also resolved a dispute with Mexico by resorting to arbitration as recommended by the peace movement.



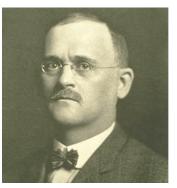
President Theodore Roosevelt is a fifth cousin to the 32nd President Franklin Delano Roosevelt, who is <u>my half eighth cousin</u>. So, Teddy is a cousin to a cousin. His other relation to us is through his niece, Eleanor Roosevelt, who married Franklin Delano Roosevelt. Another way to describe Teddy's relationship is that he is the brother of the father-in-law of the seventh great grandson of my seventh fifth great grandmother, Alice Carpenter.



In 1929, <u>Franklin (Frank) Billings Kellogg</u>, the 45th Secretary of State (1925-1929), who served under two Presidents (Calvin Coolidge and Herbert Hoover), was awarded the Nobel Peace Prize. He also served as U.S. Ambassador to the United Kingdom (1924-1925).

Mr. Kellogg co-authored the <u>Kellogg-Briand Pact</u>, for which he was awarded the Nobel Peace Prize. He is the <u>5th great grandson of Joseph Kellogg</u> (1626-1707), who is my 7th great grandfather. Stated another way, he is the half 6th cousin, twice removed to me. <u>Here is my description of him</u>.

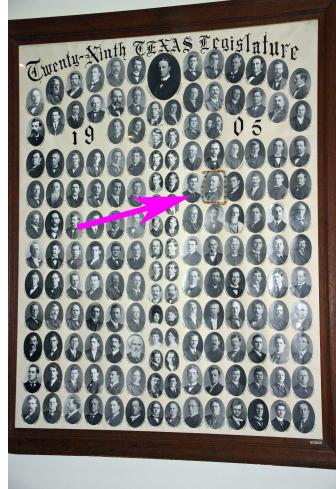
A side interest is that Frank is a 5th cousin, once removed from Will Keith Kellogg, the founder in 1906 of the Battle Creek Toasted Corn Flake Company, now known as the <u>W. K. Kellogg Company</u>.



Chapter 39 Alfred Lansing Sharpe, First Republican in Texas Legislature

Alfred Lansing Sharpe was born November 21, 1858 in <u>Ravenna</u>, Portage County, Ohio. He migrated to <u>Georgetown</u>, Williamson County, Texas, about 30 miles north of the <u>Texas State Capital</u>, Austin. His arrival time is undocumented, but he started a hardware business in 1892. During his life, he had four marriages.

He practiced law in Williamson County as well. Fred moved his family out to El Paso, El Paso County, Texas in 1899. He established a ranch. His U Bar Ranch was near the town of San Elizario, and was along the Rio Grande, the river bordering the United States with Mexico. The ranch was near the





small town of Ysleta, which is the oldest town recognized in what is now the State of Texas, having had its beginnings attributed at about 1682.

There's even the prospect that it was his land where the first Thanksgiving in Texas was celebrated in 1598!

It perhaps can be said (with tongue in cheek) that Fred started the Republican Party revolution in Texas. He was elected to the <u>Twenty-ninth</u> <u>Texas Legislature</u> from district #100 encompassing El Paso County in the General Election of November 8, 1904. He was the only Republican to win any race in El Paso County, and this Legislative position was taken with a 1,050 to 1,028 vote (22 vote margin - 50.5%). He won seven out of twelve precincts. These were the out-of-the-city precincts that carried him to victory, as the city precincts were heavily Democratic in their voting patterns.

It is reported that he was the first Republican elected to a Texas state level office since the days of post-Civil War Reconstruction period. It also is reported that he authored the first anti-gambling legislation adopted by the Texas Legislature. The vitality of that bill was tested and sustained by the Texas Supreme Court, thereby placing into the hands of law enforcement officers a reliable instrument to support their arrests. A water irrigation bill also was authored by Alfred and passed. Legislative commentary claims these were two of the most important bills of that Legislative session, and that their success attested to the legislative skill plied by Representative Sharpe. There was a <u>called session</u> of that 29th legislature that met April 15-May 14, 1905. The Governor was S. W. T. Lanham and the Lt. Governor was George D. Neal.

Fred served only part of one term, as he resigned December 22, 1905 to receive an appointment from President Theodore Roosevelt to be the <u>Collector of Customs at the Port of El Paso</u>. This was considered one of the most important federal positions in all of Texas. President Roosevelt is the fifth cousin of subsequent President Franklin Delano Roosevelt, who was Fred's half-sixth cousin, twice removed.

About 1914, Fred moved to <u>Binghamton, New York</u> to become the superintendent of the office buildings owned by his cousin, <u>Willis Sharpe</u> <u>Kilmer</u>. Fred is a first cousin to Willis' mother, Julia Sharpe Kilmer, so he is first cousin, once removed to Willis. Fred had his daughter, Holland, living with him and his fourth wife, whose name apparently is Allie E. Sharpe, but whose maiden name I do not know. They resided at 212 Court Street in Binghamton, New York.

The unfortunate end of his life is detailed in the 11-page detailed genealogical report, the link to which is immediately below. In an argument over finances, he shot and wounded his daughter, Holland, who survived. However, he turned the handgun upon himself and died. Here is the <u>11-page detailed genealogical report on Alfred Lansing Sharpe</u>.

Texas House of Representatives

Texas State Legislature





House of Representatives Chamber Texas State Capitol Austin, Texas

Chapter 40 Our Family & the Four Greatest Documents of Governance

The four most significant documents of governance in World History are all cited in this chapter, because the creation of all four of them has to do with men who are relatives in our family.

The <u>Magna Carter</u> and the <u>Mayflower Compact</u> are the two documents cited here, due to their far-reaching impact upon democracy as we know it in the world today. One English woman, <u>Alice Carpenter</u>, is a unique tie between these two documents in a very interesting way.

Alice Carpenter

Alice Carpenter, widowed from Englishman Edward Southworth, came to the new Plymouth Colony in the New World the summer of 1623 on the sail ship "Anne." Soon, she married William Bradford, the new Governor of the colony, which was the first marriage of that colony. Their acquaintance reached back to the Leiden group days when she and her first husband, Edward, were a part of that group. Probably, the marriage was planned, in

advance, and was the reason that she traveled at that time.

Alice represents connections to two of the most significant historical

279

documents in the world that deal with government, freedom, human rights and democracy. Her first husband, Edward Southworth, is the 11th great grandson of <u>King</u> <u>Edward</u> I, known as "Longshanks," due to his great height.

Edward was the grandson in a trilogy of three generations of Kings (John of Lackland, <u>Henry III</u> and himself) who issued 17 known editions or versions, beginning in 1215 AD, of what became known as the Magna Carta. Magna Carta,

> Portrait in Westminster Abbey, thought to be o Edward I





meaning 'The Great Charter', is one of the most famous documents in the world. Originally issued by King John of England (r.1199-1216) as a practical solution to the political crisis he faced in 1215, Magna Carta established for the first time the principle that everybody, including the king, was subject to the law. Although nearly a third of the text was



deleted or substantially rewritten within ten years, and almost all the clauses have been repealed in modern times, Magna Carta remains a cornerstone of the British constitution. Most of the 63 clauses granted by King John dealt with specific grievances relating to his rule. However, buried within them were several fundamental values that both challenged the autocracy of the king and proved highly adaptable in future centuries. Most famously, the 39th clause gave all 'free men' the right to justice and a fair trial. Some of Magna Carta's core principles are echoed in the United States Bill of Rights (1791) and in many other constitutional documents around the world, as well as in the Universal Declaration of Human Rights (1948) and the European Convention on Human Rights (1950).

See more at: <u>https://www.bl.uk/magna-</u> <u>carta/articles/magna-carta-an-</u>

introduction#sthash.1EwNzgQO.dpuf

The significance of these documents is they laid out in written order the concepts that the king was not all powerful. Instead, the King did need to consult with the citizenry about certain matters. The Barons, in these cases, are like a legislature. This was the beginning seeds of civil and human rights first expressed in a national government level official document in World History.

It must be remembered that the three Kings agreed to these things under pressure from the Barons, and not because the Kings felt magnanimous for the people's rights. These Kings consented to these royal limitations to remain on the throne without inviting civil

Fifteen of the known copies of the Magna Carta reside in various British institutions, one is in Australia and one is in the United States.

In 1984, that copy of the Magna Carta became property of the Perot Foundation of Dallas, Texas. The foundation's originator, Mr. H. Ross Perot, Sr., is an acquaintance of mine and a member of the church where I was the Executive Administrator for the Senior Pastor for 22 years prior to my retirement, Highland Park Presbyterian Church in Dallas, Texas. The Magna Carta copy Mr. Perot purchased for \$1.5 Million was issued by King Edward I in 1297 AD, and its significance is that it was the only one of the 17 editions that the text of which found some of its way into wording of legislation in England. There are 37 sections to that edition and ten of them are reportedly still on the law books of England today as originally put.

Mr. Perot gave me a couple of copies of posters he had made illustrating that copy of the Magna Carta and they are nicely framed for my personal display. They now have been passed on to my eldest son, Taylor Marcus Sharpe, handing on the walls of his home in Dallas, TX.

The Perot Foundation put the Magna Carta up for auction in 2007. The purchaser paid \$21.3 Million. That was a fine appreciation over almost two dozen years!

Though the document primarily is one of governance, it does attribute the validity of its authority to the Grace of God. One of the first elements made plain is the freedom to worship that the Church of England was to have. The Church was to be free from direct governmental

management. There still was indirect government management, through the appointment of

bishops, etc.

The next document of significant governance place in history is the Mayflower Compact. Upon their arrival in the New World at that later became Plymouth, Massachusetts,



Signing the Mayflower Compact 1620, a painting by Jean Leon Gerome Ferris 1899

November 1620, the 102 passengers resolved among themselves to forge a document of self-governing understanding prior to setting foot upon the new home land. This became known as the Mayflower Compact. Alice's second husband, <u>William Bradford</u>, was a significant leader and a man of God among the <u>Mayflower Pilgrims</u>.

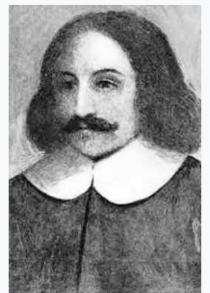
Though he was not formally educated, his self-education was such to make him probably the most learned and literate man among those <u>102</u> <u>Mayflower passengers</u>. His knowledge of Hebrew, Greek and Latin enabled him to expound Biblical teachings with authority. He also had abilities in two other languages. He went on later to be elected as their Colony Governor in 33 of the first 35 years of their history.

The men among those passengers signed what was to be called the Mayflower Compact shortly after arriving at the new land, but prior to setting foot on the new land. It was a document to outline a system of self-government by which these people would live in freedom, in God's grace, but would have an understood order of authority from the citizens necessary for their new society to prosper. This was the first such document in the New World to affirm these concepts in writing, and it was crouched deeply in the belief of

God through Christianity.

Though it is not reported exactly who composed that document *(it presumably was a document of expression from all of them),* it is likely that Bradford was a coauthor, if not the principle author of its composition. After all, no one knows where the original copy disappeared, but the only reason we have the words captured today is that Bradford, in his writing of the history of the Plymouth Colony, cited the words, which obviously were

William Bradford



A conjectural image of Bradford, produced as a postcard in 1904 by A.S. Burbank of Plymouth.^[1]

exactly familiar to him. Additionally, he was self-educated with a working knowledge of six different languages, more than any other passenger known on the Mayflower. Bradford's six languages were English, Dutch, French, Hebrew, Latin and Greek. His desire to know the basis of the Bible motivated him to learn the Hebrew, Latin, Greek combination of languages. Here is a copy of Bradford's hand-written copy in wrote in later years. No copies of the original exist. With his being the primary Arthur, this copy most likely is the most accurate we can have.

File by them home (this their condition comfidered) might to as firme as any patent; and in forme refreite mono-fues. The forme was as followeld. In I name of god from Semble names are under writen. The loyal subjects of our dread four signs ford King tames by I grass of god, of great britaine, france fretand king beforder of Jailt, or great heilaine, france freland king deforder of Jailt, or Hanning underleht, for f glorit of ead, and advancements of finitian and homens of our king countrie, a suggest pland J first colonie in f Harthern's parts of virginia. Bos-hy these preferits solumnly a maturaly in foreforme of ead, and one of another, contempt a combine our films tograther idea cinia body publick, for Floder ordering a prefermation of an-therapic of and advant, and to work here to constant. theranio of f ends appraint; and by vertue hear of to charte, constitute, and frame this just coquat lames, or dinances, tile, constitutions a chices from time to time, as that to though most meete a convenient for 3 general good of & colonie and on the metics we promite at due submission and obstance of multies wheref we have been under sufferilet our names at cape codt 3 - 11 of Heatmater - I grave of 9 raigne of our conserving loved king James of Cugland, frances a of reland 3 eighten and of scotland 9 fifts fourth for Dom: 1620] After this they Delo or roller confirmed - John caracela man tolly a net agrent our anget them facir concours for the year . And after they had growted a glace for the great or toment stars (which were long in antesting for ment of bals finders of f minter weeks, and fickness of hinsens) and bygan tomo frank cologes for their habitaken, as time winted advants they and and confided of lames, & orders, both for their civil a military conserverto, as I nocofibie of their condi-tion did requires, this alking thornate as orgent occupion - seneral times, and Rajes did require. In these hard a dificulto beginings they found forms difeontents a murings, amongst forms, and mutinens forethes a carries moller; but they were forno quetod concreme, by my. hours fatienes, and shall a count carrage of things, by goat and bottom wart with claus faithfully logenter in & mains ; but that which was most salt a tamentallo, was that in 2 an 3 monoths time galls of their company doct, itstag an isan of strong , soing & docts of minter and menting confor a shor comforts, koing supported with & ganess o 品 Bradford's transcription of the

compact

Alice's Carpenter family has a significance of its own. Notice the thread of strong achieving character cited in this following information about her father and her sisters. The Carpenter family had roots deep and long in England, and one source cites the family estate in the early 1700's as having a value of what would be equivalent to over \$100 million.

Alexander Carpenter, Alice's father, was from <u>Wrington, Somersetshire,</u> <u>England</u>. The five Carpenter sisters were the daughters of Alexander Carpenter. They had a brother, but he died early in life. Alexander and his family were members of <u>John Robinson's</u> congregation who moved to Leiden. Three of Alexander's daughters married in Leiden. One of these married daughters died without children, but the remaining four immigrated to Plymouth after 1620 and occupied important positions in the civic life in Plymouth.

Juliana married George Morton, in Leiden in July 1612. Juliana and George and their children arrived in Plymouth in 1623, probably aboard the Anne. Morton was one of the authors of *Mourt's Relation*, the first account of life in Plymouth written to entice Englishmen to settle in Plymouth. George Morton died in 1624. Juliana subsequently married Manasseh Kempton, but had no children by him. In the 1627 cattle division, Juliana, Manasseh, and her children by Morton (Nathaniel, John, Ephraim and Patience) were listed in Bradford's company. Juliana's oldest son Nathaniel was born in Leiden in 1613. In 1647, Nathaniel became clerk of the Plymouth court, a position he held until his death in 1685. Throughout his life, Nathaniel held strong opinions that influenced

After the death of her father Alexander, Mary Carpenter cared of her mother in Leiden. After she died, William and Alice (Carpenter) Bradford wrote to Mary in 1645, asking her to come to Plymouth to live with them. Mary immigrated to Plymouth, but never married.

Alice Carpenter married Edward Southworth in Leiden in 1613. Edward died before 1620. After the death of his wife in 1620, Dorthea May, William Bradford wrote to Alice, inviting her to come to Plymouth. She arrived on the Anne in June 1623 and married Bradford in August 1623. Alice's two sons by Southworth were Constant (b 1614/6) and Thomas (b1616/20). They moved to Plymouth Colony about 1628 to live in the Bradford's home. Three children were born to Alice and William Bradford: William, Mercy and Joseph. William later served as assistant to his father.

Agnes Carpenter married the widower Dr. Samuel Fuller in Leiden in April 1613. They had no children. She died sometime before 1617 and Samuel Fuller married Bridget Lee in Leiden in 1617. Bridget arrived in America in 1623 aboard the Anne. Fuller was a signer of the Mayflower Compact in 1620 and served the colony as surgeon, physician and church deacon. Bridget became the colony's midwife and is thought to be a deaconess as well. Fuller died in Plymouth before the cattle division in 1627.

Priscilla arrived in Plymouth after the cattle division of 1627. She married William Wright in Plymouth after 1627, but before 1633. William arrived in Plymouth on the Fortune in 1621 and assumed leading roles in Plymouth affairs. Unfortunately, he died in 1633. Priscilla then married John Cooper in 1634. John Cooper's sisters, Ann and Lydia Cooper, married Ephraim and Nathaniel Morton. John and Priscilla moved to Scituate, where he was constable in 1639. They later moved to Barnstable, where he was a deputy in 1642. John's will is dated in 1676.

So, it is with blessing and honor that I associate with these people and with these two significant documents that have represented major governance freedom for men and women in our nation and in England. Let us not forget the people behind those great concepts of governance that have endured so well. Let us not allow development in our nation to erode the qualities of freedom, self-governance and freedom of religion. Let us remain free to be men, woman and children who know and revere God, the creator.

We can be thankful for the experience of knowing about Alice Carpenter, a woman whose two marriages brought together family lines of two such high profile men in history who were associated with the very fundamentals of freedom and all that we, as Americans, hold dear for our self-governance.

Now, to expand upon the <u>Theory of Relativity</u>, it is with great pleasure and fun that note can be made that King Edward I, in addition to being my cousin, 21 times removed on my Mother's side of the family. On top of that is that our daughter, Tiffany Lenn Sharpe married Steve Otis Westmoreland. They are 33rd cousins, four times removed! I suppose that is distant enough not to worry about too close of an inter-family marriage! In addition to that significance on relativity with Alice Carpenter's first marriage, it is also true that her second marriage, which was to Gov. William Bradford, created the family and descendants in which my life has been lived, for they are my <u>7th great grandparents</u>.

The other two most famous documents of governance in the world are the Declaration of Independence, which the British Colonists proclaimed on July 4, 1776, and the subsequent organizational document to outline how the new American government would be governed, known as the United States Constitution.

The Declaration of Independence was developed during June and July of 1776 at a gathering of representatives from 13 British Colonies in Philadelphia, known as the Continental Congress. The Congress selected a Committee of Five, with <u>Thomas Jefferson</u> as its head, to be the primary composer of a declaration to be adopted and approved by the delegates. Thomas Jefferson was nominated by John Adams to be the primary writer. Both men subsequently served as Presidents of the United States.

Jefferson, the third President of the United States, is the 9th cousin, twice removed of the husband of the stepdaughter of my 6th great grand uncle. John Adams, the second President of the United States, is the husband of Abigail Smith, a 30th cousin, three times removed to me. Refer to Abigail's notes in this record for more details. Abigail also is the 13th cousin, three times removed to our first President, General George Washington. Another delegate signing the Declaration was Robert Treat Paine from Massachusetts, who was my 3rd cousin, six times removed.

The Constitution of the United States is the supreme law of our national government. It was created September 17, 1787 at the Philadelphia Convention, and finally ratified by June 21, 1788 by the required 13

states. The original structure was seven Articles, followed shortly by adoption of the first ten amendments, which became known as the Bill of Rights. Subsequently the Constitution has been amended a total of 27 times.

James Madison Jr. (March 16, 1751 – June 28, 1836) was an American statesman and Founding Father who served as the fourth President of the United States from 1809 to 1817. He is hailed as the "Father of the Constitution" for his pivotal role in drafting and promoting the United States Constitution and the Bill of Rights.

Both James Madison, Jr. and Thomas Jefferson were related to our family on my Mother's Abney side of the family lines. So, we can claim my Father's side of the family for the Maga Charta and the Mayflower Compact documents, and my Mother's for the Declaration of Independence and the United States Constitution.

Truly it is a worthy set connections to which family connections are recorded.

Chapter 41 History of Four Fair Grounds in Noxubee County Mississippi

Back in 1988, my father-in-law, Thomas Shelton (T. S.) Boggess, Jr., asked me to assist him in composing a history of the County Fairs that had been held over the years in Noxubee County, Mississippi. The history of these fairs stretched back to 1850 and was produced in many of the years between then and 1956.

<u>The History of Four Fair Grounds in Noxubee County Mississippi</u> is 56 pages in length, and may be referenced from this link:

http://www.dasharpe.com/Genealogy/NoxubeeCoFairs.html

The Boggess family interfaced with activities of this County Fairs saga throughout most all of its history. An account of this early fairground told T. S. by his father, Tom Boggess, Sr., who gave him a silver cup won by his grandmother, Eliza L. Wellborn Boggess. She was a Wilkes County, Georgia born lady whose 1830 marriage to Bennett Boggess was in Huntsville, Alabama, where she raised her family. As a widow, she and most of her family moved to Macon by 1856. The engraving on the cup states, "Premium Noxubee Fair, 1859."

The next Boggess involvement with these Fairs was T. S.'s father, Captain Thomas S. Boggess, Jr., who was listed as one of the several people promoting the 1884 Fair.

So, with the extensive involvement of the Boggess family over the 106-year history of the Fairs, there is appropriate reason that a Boggess should have the charge of assembling such a history. All in all, there were four generations of Boggess family members participating in the Fairs.

Another matter that brought swells of family appreciation is the record of premiums, which are still in the family. There is a 1859 Silver Goblet won by Eliza L. Wellborn (Mrs. Bennett) Boggess, mother of Captain T. S. Boggess. There is a 1921 Silver Living Cup won by Tom Boggess, Sr. for his Grand Champion Diary Bull. And there are six silver goblets won from the 1940's and 1950's, and it is still kept by my wife, Suzanne. T. S., in his history, said that it is the Boggess women who stand at the extreme two ends of five generations of our family being in Noxubee County Fairs. Eliza L. Wellborn Boggess, a widow who migrated here from Huntsville, Alabama, with most of her children in the mid 1850's to join her two brothers who'd been around since the 1833 organization of Noxubee County, is the first of our women. And the last of our women serving this beloved Fair is Suzanne Margaret Boggess Sharpe, a current day resident of Dallas, Texas. (In 1999, Suzanne and I moved to Wise County Texas, our current home)



Suzanne claims a Silver Goblet Trophy Cup at the West Point, MS location of the Noxubee County Fair in 1950. Suzanne was age 12 in this photo.



Chapter 42 Four Knights on A Charge – A 1929 Trip Out West

My father-in-law is a genuine Southern gentleman farmer, of cultural roots and of sound academic accomplishment. He is Mr. Thomas (T. S. or Tom) Shelton Boggess, Jr. He was raised in Macon, Noxubee County, Mississippi, though his mother retreated to her parents' home for his birth of March 30, 1912 in Texarkana, Texas. The Boggess family exhibited numerous traits of community leadership in that Southern rural agricultural county, and they were viewed as pillars of the society, having been there since about 1853.

T. S. graduated from Macon High School in 1930, attended Mississippi State University and graduated from Louisiana State University with bachelor's and master's degrees, along with almost completing his PhD. Most of his working life involved faculty membership as a biochemist in the Food Science Department of the University of Georgia, with side stints in farming, in the agricultural merchant business (he owned a feed store in Macon) and in marketing infrastructure solutions to cities and counties across the South (he sold clay pipe). His lovely bride was Alice McElroy of Ottumwa, Iowa. His two children are Suzanne Margaret Boggess (my wife) and Dr. Thomas Shelton Boggess III, DVM.



August and early September of 1929 created a memorable chapter in the lives of T. S. and three other young boys. At the ages of 17, T. S., Mr. Edward (Ed) Faser Hardin, Jr. and Mr. Frank Rhymes, along with T. S.'s young 15-year old first cousin, Julian (Juicy) Eugene Boggess, Jr. began the embarkation of a lifetime for these boys. The older three boys would graduate from

Macon High School the following year. Can you imagine the parents who allowed these adventuresome young high school seniors (and a sophomore) to embark upon a fantasy trip across America to the West Coast, including Mexico? They were provided with a brand new 1928 Chevrolet Coupe with a Rumble Seat! Someone had ordered it at the Chevrolet Dealer in Macon, but it was declined upon arrival. So, T. S.'s father, Mr. Tom, purchased it. T. S. said the trip just about wore out the car. After the trip, Mr. Tom sold it to a local man who drove it for another decade.

Ed was perhaps T. S.'s closest childhood friend. They were like salt and pepper together, and this continued into their adult lives. Ed's occupation in Macon was as a merchant in the building supplies business. Ed and his wife, Dotsie Adams, raised their daughter, Barbara who married professional football player and Macon businessman, Bobby Crespino and their son, Ed (Faser) Hardin, III who married Annie Chadwick. Both are guite accomplished musicians in New York City. Juicy became a well-admired physician with a practice in near-by Columbus, Mississippi. Juicy and his wife, Put, raised six children and raised another family of six children when those children's parents met an untimely death. Frank's father owned the brick-making factory near Macon, and Frank worked there as well as at other Macon endeavors. All these adventuresome boys developed into solid credits to the society in which they were a part. The undated photo below is of T. S., but we believe it probably was a photo of the actual coupe automobile the boys used for the trip.



At this writing in 2008, T. S. is 96 years old. My recent interview with him at his residential retirement home, the Terraces in Phoenix, Arizona, has helped fill in some of the details about which I'd heard much of my married life in the Boggess family. He said they departed Macon with \$200 cash each. This was intended to fund the total round trip. Remember, this was immediately prior to the national earth-shaking recession of the 1930's caused by the precipitous crash of the New York Stock Market on Black Tuesday, October 29, 1929. So, prices were higher than in the depression-era of the 1930's. Gasoline was generally 15 to 25 cents per gallon for most of their trip, and of course, the Chevy Coupe was not up to par as are today's automobiles in fuel efficiency. The highest gas prices were in and near the State and National Parks.

They expected to lodge in parks mostly with camping gear they packed tightly in that cramped automobile. This seemed to work well, until they hit Monsoon Seasons in some parts of the trek, which drove them to commercial lodging. Obviously, this consumed their cash reserves faster than expected.

The first leg of the journey took them west out U.S. Highway 80. They drove south on U.S. Highway 45 to Meridian, Mississippi, then turned west. The first stop of tourist interest was in Vicksburg. Mississippi where they visited the 118-acre National Military Park which contained graves of soldiers who fought in the Battle of Vicksburg on the banks of the Mississippi River. The layout was by state from which the 17,077 (12,909 of whom are unidentified) casualties hailed, both from the Union Army and from the Confederacy. An additional 1,280 graves were there in 1929 and later of soldiers from the Indian Wars, Spanish-American War and World War I. After the Macon knights were there, soldiers were interred from World War II and the Korean War. The surrender of Confederate troops on July 4, 1863, coupled with the fall of Port Hudson, Louisiana, divided the South and gave the North undisputed control of the Mississippi River. This National Cemetery takes 16 miles of road to tour it. Macon to Vicksburg is 195 miles.

They traveled through Shreveport, Louisiana on to Dallas, Texas. While getting service at a gasoline station in Dallas, they met a Mr. Patty, whose family was from Macon. He recognized the boys home town and remembered some family names. He made the boys feel welcomed in their brief pause at Dallas. Vicksburg to Dallas, TX is 360 miles.

The next leg of the journey took them through Odessa, Texas. Just beyond Odessa, the car broke down and they had to be towed back to Odessa. The Chevrolet dealer fixed the car at the expense of the dealer back in Macon, who had been overzealous in tightening some of the springs in the engine that caused the malfunction. This took an unexpected two days' wait. Dallas to Odessa is 355 miles. Continuing on west, they came to Carlsbad, New Mexico where they took the tour of the Carlsbad Caverns, known perhaps as the largest series of caves in the country (realizing that Mammoth Cave competes for that title as well). Odessa, TX to Carlsbad, NM is 165 miles. Carlsbad Caverns National Park covers 46,766 acres in the Guadalupe Mountains in southern New Mexico, and the park contains 76 other separate caves. When they arrived at Carlsbad, an official questioned them about how they got through when the rivers were flooding. They explained how they were used to getting through water. The next day, the newspapers there carried a story about an automobile being washed away in the current just about where they had crossed a day earlier! Close call.

Next, they came to El Paso, Texas 165 miles later, where the first major obstacle to be faced was the flooding Rio Grande. Their time in El Paso was when they took a side trip over the border to Mexico. There was not really much excitement for the boys, as it mostly reflected the stark poverty characterized in the area. A reassessment of their options took them north to the famous Route 66 of legendary fame (U.S. Highway 66, the figurative yellow brick road from Chicago to Los Angeles – though that term did not become known widely till The Wizard of Oz was released ten years later). The boys proceeded westward ho again.

The trip was all on gravel and dirt roads, with only the cities having anything paved. Route 66 was under construction and provided many barriers and challenges for the boys to circumvent. There were almost no bridges anywhere on the trip. When the pathway confronted a river, it was a matter of going up and down the river to locate water shallow enough through which the car could navigate. It included some motor dying and pushing experiences by the boys to get the car out of the water. Another road hazard that we take for granted today are guardrails, especially on curves in the mountains where the drop-off from the road was somewhat considerable ... sometimes off into a canyon. At times, the car started to slip away, and the boys would have to stop, get out and push the car back onto the road. AAA was not yet invented!

They headed across New Mexico and Arizona to Flagstaff, which stands at a hefty 8,000 foot elevation and 590 miles from El Paso.

From there, they took the short 90-mile trip north to visit the vast chasms of the Grand Canyon. They did not do much more than to peer over the sides, then off on their continued journey. Across Arizona and Nevada were uneventful expanses of wide plains, large plateaus and the tail end of the Rocky Mountains. Their goal in reaching California was to avoid crossing Death Valley. To do this, their California entrance was Needles, California, 235 miles from the Grand Canyon. When they arrived at Needles, the highway engineer addressed them and wanted to know just how in the world they got through. They told him they were from Mississippi and thoroughly used to pushing vehicles through mud. He could not believe they made it through the flooding!

Though Los Angeles was not too far away to the southwest, they avoided it and went to Laguna Beach, California, where they settled for a week with a family who had family roots back to Macon. There is a five-star restaurant there, the Brown Derby. The dress code was formal, and the boys did not live up to that sartorial splendor. However, Ed Harden told the headwaiter that he personally knew Johnny Mac Brown, a well-known football player for the University of Alabama and up and coming movie star with roles as Kit Carson and being cast with the likes of John Wayne. Apparently, that association did the trick. The boys were served! Laguna Beach is 265 miles from Needles.

While still with friends in Laguna Beach, they could get checks cashed through the friends to replenish their funds. They each drew another \$200, using the blank checks given them when they started out on the trip.

The tire iron and jack normally were under the front seat. They moved them to the bottom of the rumble seat to make storage room under the front seat for cans of evaporated condensed milk and cans of Vienna sausage. These were the emergency staples for when they did not have other provisions to eat on the trip.

Next, they went north up the Sacramento Valley, that broad copula of farming excellence in endless acres of orchards and vineyards. This kept them safely on the west side of Death Valley. This area is watered generously by the Sacramento River, and much irrigation is

accomplished. They went as far North as Sacramento, the State Capital. It was 435 miles from Laguna Beach.

The boys next traveled 90 miles to the Pacific Coast at San Francisco. They were pleased to cross the San Francisco Bay on the Golden Gate Ferry, the predecessor of what later would become the Golden Gate Bridge running north out of San Francisco. The following mileage was somewhat uneventful, taking them across northern California, Nevada and on to Salt Lake City, Utah. This leg took several days and 740 miles. The Great Salt Lake attracted their interest. They were told by signage not to dive into the lake, known as one of the most buoyant bodies of salt water in the world. However, Juicy was not deterred by signage, and he dove heartily into the lake. This may have been the first time Juicy every tried to float a loan (or is it "alone"?).

On the Great Salt Lake was a Pavilion, which was a social and entertainment facility. It was there that the boys met four blond girls who were happy to give them a tour of the Mormon Tabernacle back in the city. The boys went on the tour, but were not permitted into the Temple proper, as they were not Mormon. It goes without saying that the girls were not successful in their efforts to make the boys Ladder Day Saints (or was it "Latter"?). Initially, they tried to camp near-by, but the horde of large mosquitoes drove them into commercial lodging again. They stayed two or three days.

The following adventure took them north to Yellowstone National Park in the Northwest corner of Wyoming. This was quite an experience for the boys, and was 375 miles from Salt Lake City. Again, they ran into the dress code problem for dining, as this remote lodge was top drawer! While there, they befriended a husband and wife who had two daughters with them. The family was in a big fancy Lincoln automobile, which had heated up trying to ascend the mountain. The man apparently knew little of working with engines. However, our boys did know how to help, and they were equipped. On the running boards of their Chevy were kept gasoline cans strapped on the one side and water cans strapped on the other side. They provided the family with water and T. S. drove their car for the rest of the day's tour up and around the mountain. The family appreciated the boys' help and sort of adopted them for two or three days. I think they treated them to some meals. Frank, who was an avid fisherman, wanted to stay along the Yellowstone River to fish. T. S., Ed and Juicy took off in the Chevy for two or three days to explore other parts of Yellowstone Park. When they returned to find Frank, he was in the protective custody of the Park Rangers! It seems that a Black Bear had chased Frank cornering him in a tree. The Rangers rescued Frank before the bear could climb up the tree.

Bears were a tourist attraction in a way we probably would not see today. At certain times, the Park Rangers would place meat out where the Black Bears would find it and the bears would ravage it. The visitors would stand safely off in the distance in protected fenced in areas, while the Rangers stood by with rifles to insure safety. However, it was easily seen that when the Grizzly Bear came onto the scene, the Black Bear scampered off in fear of this king of the forest.

T. S. met an artist in Yellowstone Park from whom he purchased a painting of the Yellowstone Falls. This he made as a gift to his Mother, Mary Hicks Taylor Boggess. She displayed it in their home for many years. The last T. S. knows, it was stored in the Boggess home attic. We know not where it lies today.

Getting another message back to Macon about their need for more money resulted in a check for \$25 sent by Mr. Hardin, with the demand to get on home immediately! To say the least, the glory parts of traveling were over, and the boys headed straight down the highways the quickest way they could to return home.

From Yellowstone Park, they dropped 475 miles down to Cheyenne, Wyoming. From there, they traveled 885 miles across Nebraska and Kansas, on to Saint Louis, Missouri. One thing that plagued them during most of the trip was the frequent need to fix flat tires. The crude roads and highways of the day were terribly hard on those early era rubber tires on wooden spokes. There were so many patches on some of the tires that they stuffed old dirty clothes into the tires to make it into Saint Louis. The tire dealer there had pity on the boys and supplied new tires on the faith that their parents would reimburse him. Mr. Tom, of course, sent a check as soon as he learned of the story. Next, it was down the Old Man River 285 miles to Memphis, Tennessee, which almost is in the Noxubee County home territory. Just another 190 miles and the families and the city of Macon took the charging knights back into the safety of that loving and caring community.

The distances between visit points cited here total 5,920 miles. However, there obviously several hundred miles of local touring that would have happened. So, we can say that this charge of the four knights was well over a 6,000-mile trek.

These boys were not the first from Macon to take such a venture. John Borders (J. B.) Cunningham had taken a similar trip with company, and Bill Cunningham had gone another time. Macon was like that. Its citizens were of a small, close-knit rural community, but were destined to break across the wide expanse of this nation in the things about which they learned and explored.

These boys had tasted America in a way that broadened their knowledge of what our great nation represents. It impressed them with fond memories that revisited their minds, I am confident, over many years. I know the recollections have been with T. S., as his references to the great trip out west always allowed me to know of the importance in his life of this adventure for himself and for the other three young Macon men.

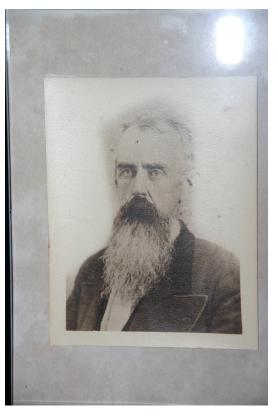


T. S. Boggess, Jr., with is daughter, Suzanne Margaret Boggess Sharpe and her husband, D. A. Sharpe, the author. T. S. graduated to Heaven on January 29, 2010. He was absolutely the very best father-in-law I ever could have had. My life and the lives of our family were richly blessed with him as the senior father figure for us.

Chapter 43 The Saga of Irby Holt Boggess

Captain Irby Hold Boggess was a <u>Meigs</u> <u>County, Tennessee</u>-born man, born November 5, 1835, being the 11th of 13 children given issue by Abijah Boggess (1795 – 1884) and Susan Jordan (1796 – 1866). Irby's ancestry is traceable back to Robert Boggess, an English immigrant who, with his family, disembarked from a ship landing at Lower Norfolk County, Virginia in 1656.

Irby married in North Carolina in 1859, quickly following into service in the War Between the States. After that military experience, he connected working on a Mississippi plantation, then migrating north to Tennessee.



It was said that Irby fled to Texas, being accused of killing a man by gun, settling in Montague County, about 80 miles north of the Dallas and Fort Worth area. His life thereafter created a varied, exciting and interest saga, which is reported in the program presentation I made for the Daughters of the Republic of Texas James Butler Bonham Chapter at the Royal Lane Baptist Church in Dallas, October 13, 2000.

Here is the complete 13-page story, through this hyperlink.

http://www.dasharpe.com/Genealogy/Saint-Jo.pdf



This is the Saint Jo Cemetery, named for the Boggess family. Here is the grave stone of Irby Holt Boggess and his wife, Barbara Allen, which Suzanne and I visited in researching Irby's story.

Chapter 44 Tales of Dr. John Thomas Taylor, a Boggess Family Dentist

Dr. John Thomas Taylor, born August 12, 1864, Saint Louis, Missouri, is the great grandfather of my wife, Suzanne Margaret Boggess Sharpe. He died May 19, 1935 in Fort Worth, Tarrant County, Texas. Dr. Taylor shared a birthday with famous artist Rembrandt Van Rijn (1606 - 1669) and with popcorn personality Orville Redenbacher (1907 - 1995).

Dr. Taylor seemed to take advantage of many opportunities, as they lived in many locations, practicing the profession of dentistry. This included, from what I've determined, residing in Missouri, California, Arkansas, Tennessee, and Texas. He and Ida Capatola Hicks were married about 43 years.

Their marriage gave issue to three children: Mary Belle Hicks Taylor (September 15, 1887 – Mar 27, 1960); Irene Taylor (born 1895); and John Hicks Taylor, (April 12, 1899 – April 12, 1964).

Here is a photograph of Ida Capatola Hicks Taylor (on the R) with her son, John Hicks Taylor in his U.S. Navy uniform, and the eldest daughter, Mary Belle Hicks Taylor. This undated photograph perhaps was taken in the 1940s, as that's when John Hicks was in the Navy/



Dr. Taylor was divorced from Ida Capatola Hicks by 1929, though the date of the divorce is uncertain. Our information about him after the divorce is limited. He remarried in 1929. It was to a woman named Florence J. Rohere (1835 – 1970). Family oral tradition, undocumented, leads us to believe she is someone who was on his dental office staff, some 21 years younger than he.

There is a Mason Family Tree Report on Ancestry.com which reports that Dr. Thomas and family resided in 1910 at Plano Town, Collin County, Texas about 15 miles north of Dallas. It does not cite documentation for that fact.

The 1910 Census in Sulphur Springs, Hopkins County, Texas, indicates a household that is complex. That location is about 80 miles east of Dallas. Besides John's wife, Ida Capatola, and three children of whom we would have expected to be listed, there is an indication of a 64-year old widowed grandmother and an 88 year old widowed great grandmother living with this family. It does not indicate if these are the ancestors of John or of Ida. Since we do know the names of Ida's ancestors, it should be assumed that these names belong to John's family. The names listed are Belle Hendren and Cornelius (great grandmother's last name not indicated). Belle was Dr. Taylor's Mother. It does indicate these two widowed ladies were born in Kentucky and that both of their parents were born in Kentucky.

(Source: 1910 Census, Volume I, Hopkins County, Texas, Hopkins County Genealogical Society, Sulphur Springs, Texas, page 402.)

The date of his divorce from Ida Capatola Hicks Taylor us not documented, but apparently occurred between their coming to Fort Worth in 1915 and the 1930 Census when his household is displayed with his second wife.

In the 1930 U. S. Census, Dr. Taylor's household consisted only of his second wife, Florence, and his mother, Belle. This location was Fort Worth, Tarrant County, Texas.

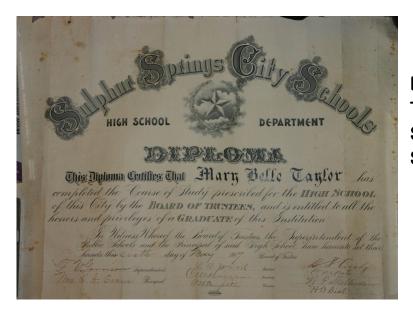
We believe Dr. Taylor moved to Fort Worth about 1915. This is drawn from the article in the May 20, 1935 issue of the Fort Worth Star-Telegram about his untimely death, which stated that he had practiced dentistry in Fort Worth for 20 years. His photograph and the story was headlined, "Dentist in Office



Blast." Early in the morning of Sunday, May 19, he had gone fishing,

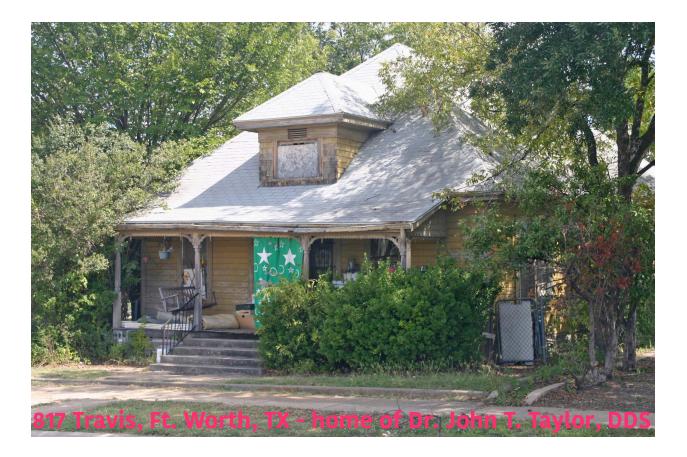
so thought his family. However, they conjectured that the fishing must not have been good, and that he must have gone to his office to work, as was his custom occasionally on Sunday mornings. The fishing may have been at the Trinity River, as it is just a few blocks from his dental office. Though the article does not report what was thought to have caused the explosion, my father-in-law, T. S. Boggess, Jr. tells me he thinks that it was a Bunsen burner, a gas burning laboratory piece of equipment, which pilot light could have ignited from a gas leak in the laboratory. My father-in-law, T. S. Boggess, Jr., visited Dr. Thomas and his family several times in Fort Worth when T. S. was a boy, so he remembers the lab in his dentist office.

My 2007 visit to his office location at 207 West Second Street, near the Tarrant County Courthouse, is shown here in that same office building, except a UPS (United Parcel Store) is situated there!



Here's Mary Bell Hicks Taylor's May 1907 High School Diploma from Sulphur Springs, Texas.

The Taylor residential location was 817 Travis, and a contemporary photograph of that home in 2007 is here on the next page.



The newspaper article described Dr. Taylor as an active man with vigor, being age 71. He was known to walk back and forth to his office, a round trip of six miles, so the article states. However, my measurement is that his home is 1.8 miles from his office, a total 3.6mile round trip. He lived at 817 Travis, just south of the central business, just south of Pennsylvania Avenue and north of Rosedale Street. It was the first street west of Hemphill Street. His office was at 207 1/2 West Second Street, right in the central business section of downtown Fort Worth, just a couple of blocks southwest from the Courthouse. I have visited and photographed both these locations in October 2007.

The news article in the Fort Worth Star Telegram, May 20, 1935, reported that, following the explosion, fireman C. A. Senior found Dr. Taylor's body in a doorway of the second story office. The death was ruled as accidental by burning, according to Justice of the Peace Beaty. The Justice Beaty said that Dr. Taylor's car parked near-by contained 12 half-gallon fruit jars in paper sacks and that a half of a candle wrapped in paper was found in his pocket. The car also contained a seine [a type of net used in fishing for capturing minnows to be used as bait] and a double-barreled shotgun.

COUNTY OF TETRAL STANDARD C	VITAL STATISTICS ERTIFICATE OF DEATH 300t Entry Houston St.
CITY OR PRECINCT NO Fort Worth, Totals No If in an Institution, give n Length of residence in city where death occurred 20, mos	Street HOUSION SF. a ame of Institution instead of Street and No.
OF DECEASED Dr. J. T. Taylor	
RESIDENCE OF THE DECEASED No. 817 Street Travis Ave.,	City Fort Werth State Texas
PERSONAL AND STATISTICAL PARTICULARS	MEDICAL CERTIFICATE OF DEATH
3. SEX COLOR OR RACE 5. Single Married Widowed Divor thar ried White (Write the word)	(month, day, and year) May , 1022 22. I HEREBY CERTIFY, That I attended decreased from
5. If married, widowed, or dimored HUSBAND of MTS. Florence Rohrer-Taylor (or) WIFE of	
6. DATE OF BIRTH (month, day; and year)	I last saw h alive on
(month, day, and year) Angust 12, 1864	I last saw h alive on
70 Years 9 Months 7 Days J day	hrs. have occurred on the date stated above, at
z kind of work done, as spinner, Dentist	
9. Industry or business in which	The second is realized in the second s
	Other contributory causes of importance:
tion (month and year) this occupation	
(City or Town) Tennessee	Name of operation
13. NAME Thomas Taylor	What test confirmed diagnosis?
Chron Torna (State or Country) Tennessee	Accident, sutcide, or homiside? accident from
B S MAIDEN NAME	Date of iniury Suffication
BIL BIETHPLACE	
(City or Town) (State or Country) Tennessee	Where did injury occur? (Specify city or town, county, and Sarta
17. INTORMANT J. Daylor	Specify whether injury occurred in in- dustry, in home, or in public place.
(Addres) 827 Travis	Manner of injury
THE BURAL, CREMA- THEN DR. BURYAL PRESENT OF DIALYAL Date May 20 .19	35 JUN 11 G
19. HNDERTAKER	24. Was disease or injury in any way
Chamions Funeral Chapel	related to occupation of deceased?
Rand Wanth Barren	If so, specify
Address) BOLT HOLEL, LEADS	- main hear

Members of the family said Dr. Taylor had arisen at 5:30 AM, announcing his intention to go fishing. The Trinity River is within walking distance of his office, and it was conjectured he'd visited his office after fishing, apparently without luck, as no fish were found in his possession.

The newspaper said he was born in Bells, Tennessee, but we believe other information we have saying his birth was in Saint

Louis, Missouri. The article said that Dr. Taylor graduated from Vanderbilt University in 1885. The article said, before his practice in Fort Worth, he practiced in Texarkana. Texas. We believe he practiced in several other locations as well.

The funeral service was conducted by the Rev. L. D. Anderson at the Mount Olivet Cemetery in Fort Worth. I visited the Cemetery 2007-10-01 to locate his grave site. The proprietors of the cemetery drew a chart of where Dr. Taylor lay, but reported that no grave marker had ever been placed. I found the grave site and saw where Florence, his second wife, was on one side, having died in 1970, and on the other side was someone else, apparently having no relationship with the Taylor's. Dr. Taylor was survived, according to the newspaper article, by his second wife and by his three children, all of whom were from his first marriage.

Dr. Taylor remarried a woman Florence J. Rohere. She was 21 years his junior, and lived till 1970.

I found address information about Dr. Taylor in the several volumes of the Fort Worth City Directory (published by Morrison & Forum, Dallas and Houston, TX). The residence address always was 817 Travis, and his dental office was 207 1/2 2nd Street. In the entries for later years, the name Florence was indicated at those addresses. What raises a question about the accuracy of these City Directories is that the 1940 volume, which was five years after Dr. Taylor's untimely death, he still was listed as residing with Florence at 817 Travis, which a dental office at 207 2nd Street! So, what can one say about that?

In 2016, Suzanne and I purchased a cemetery plot in the Greenwood Memorial Cemetery in Fort Worth, near Mount Olivet Cemetery. We learned that both cemeteries have the same owner. Our plot is alongside of the burial site of James Alfred Simons (1852-1932), my fraternal great grandfather, along with about a dozen of his descendants. So, Suzanne and I will rest in peace in neighboring cemeteries with common ownership, having relatives both from my side of the family and from Suzanne's. Here's is a photo of Dr. Taylor's grave marker.



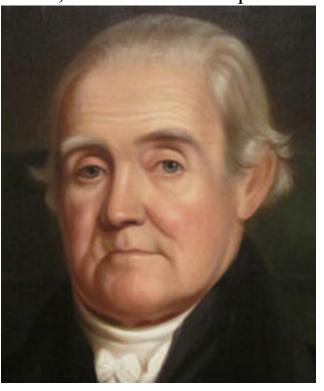
Sharing the same page in that May 20, 1935 newspaper, curiously, was the report of the motorcycle crash in Dorsetshire, England on the same day as Dr. Taylor's death. In the article died Col T. E. Lawrence at age 46, better known as "Lawrence of Arabia."

Chapter 45 Noah Webster, Lexicographer, Dictionary of 1828

Noah Webster can be noted in this report to be my third cousin, five times removed. Noah is the third great grandson of Plymouth Colony Governor William Bradford and Alice Carpenter Bradford. They are my eighth great grandparents. Another family connection can be traced. Miriam Cook is Noah's grandmother through her second marriage, which was to Daniel Webster. Miriam Cook's first husband was Abraham Kellogg, is my fifth great grand uncle. This family line comes through my father's line that goes from Sharpe to Sharp to Kellogg to Steele to Bradford. Noah is a famous lexicographer. He published his famous Dictionary, the "American Dictionary of the English Language," in 1828, and it has been republished

in recent years in its original version, as it contained many definitions that included Biblical nomenclature in the descriptions. Suzanne gave me a copy for Father's Day in 2001, and it is very interesting to browse.

Here is a hyperlink to a 3page genealogical biographical document about my cousin Noah Webster:



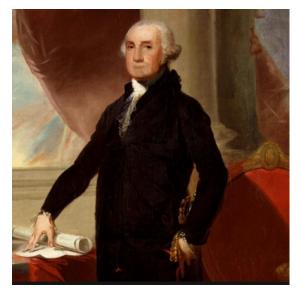
http://www.dasharpe.com/Genealogy/Webster,Noah.pdf

Chapter 46 George Washington, the Father of our Country

About the most significant figure among all the relatives found in our family is the Father of our Country, George Washington. Not only is he significant, he has an amazing series of relationships to other people who were leaders in our nation and who have near or distant relations with our family line. Lastly, President George Washington probably is held in the highest esteem among the most people in our country among all the Presidents and political leaders we have seen.

United States President George Washington is the 27th cousin, six times

<u>removed to me</u>. He is the 11th great grandson of <u>English King Edward I</u>, the last of the three Kings to issue the Magna Carta that had such place in the documents of governance as the New World developed. Our common ancestors are <u>Eystein Glumra Ivarsson</u> and his wife, Aseda Rognvaldsdatter, who are my 32nd great grandparents and George's 25th great grandparents.



Henry Spencer, Esquire, born about 1392, represents the ancestor who is common both to the United States President George Washington and to President George W. Bush (and his father). Henry Spencer is the 17th and 18th great grandfathers of these two Bushes. Henry Spencer is the tenth great grandfather of President George Washington. Henry Spencer, Esquire, born about 1392 is the 6th great grandfather of Amphilis Twigden (who lived 1602 - 1654). She is the wife of Lawrence Washington (1602 - 1653), the 8th great grandson of English King Edward I (1239 - 1307). Edward I is the 11th great grandfather of Edward Southworth (1590 - 1620) the first husband of Alice Carpenter, my 7th great grandmother. My descending from Alice is through her second husband, Plymouth Colony Governor William Bradford.

Washington is the half thirteenth cousin, thirteen times removed of my Westmoreland grandchildren, Katie, Jack, twins Lily and Sarah, and Sam.

English King Henry V is the half 4th cousin, nine times removed to George Washington. George is the half 13th cousin, 12 times removed of my son-in-law, Steven O. Westmoreland.

President George Washington is a half 13th cousin, twice removed to President Thomas Jefferson! Their ancestor in common is English King Edward I. Washington is descended through King Edward's second wife, Marguerite of France. Edward is Washington's 12th great grandfather. Jefferson is descended through King Edward's first wife, Eleanor of Castile. Edward is Jefferson's 14th great grandfather.

President Zachary Taylor is a half 13th cousin, six times removed to President Washington.

In 1732, the year of George Washington's birth, Benjamin Franklin began publishing "Poor Richard's Almanac" on December 19. George was the first President of the United States of America, he was the General and Commander of the Continental Armies, member of 1st and2nd Continental Congresses, and member of Virginia House of Burgess. He married Martha Dandridge (1732-1802), the first of what became known as First Lady of the White House.

On April 30, 1789, George Washington, standing on the balcony of Federal Hall on Wall Street in New York, took his oath of office as the first President of the United States. 'As the first of everything, in our situation will serve to establish a precedent,' he wrote James Madison, 'it is devoutly wished on my part, that the precedents may be fixed on true principles

Born in 1732 into a Virginia planter family, he learned the morals, manners, and body of knowledge requisite for an 18th century Virginia gentleman.

He pursued two intertwined interests: military arts and western expansion. At 16 he helped survey Shenandoah lands for Thomas, Lord Fairfax. Commissioned a lieutenant colonel in 1754, he fought the first skirmishes of what grew into the French and Indian War. The next year, as an aide to Gen. Edward Braddock, he escaped injury although four bullets ripped his coat and two horses were shot from under him.

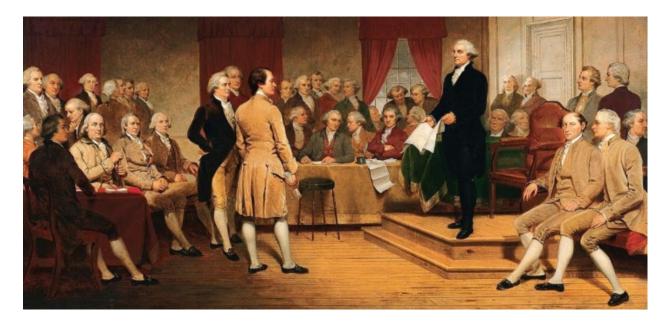
From 1759 to the outbreak of the American Revolution, Washington managed his lands around Mount Vernon and served in the Virginia House of Burgesses. Married to a widow, Martha Dandridge Curtis, he devoted himself to a busy and happy life. But, like his fellow planters, Washington felt himself exploited by British merchants and hampered by British regulations. As the quarrel with the mother country grew acute, he moderately but firmly voiced his resistance to the restrictions.

When the Second Continental Congress assembled in Philadelphia in May1775, Washington, one of the Virginia delegates, was elected Commander in Chief of the Continental Army. On July 3, 1775, at Cambridge, Massachusetts, he took command of his ill-trained troops and embarked upon a war that was to last six grueling years.

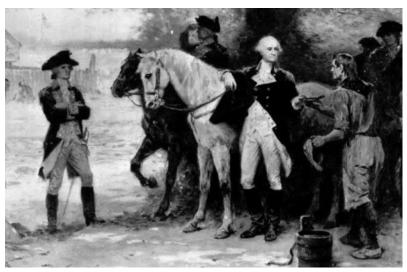
He realized early that the best strategy was to harass the British. He reported to Congress, 'we should on all Occasions avoid a general action, or put anything to risk, unless compelled by necessity, into which we ought never to be drawn.' Ensuing battles saw him fall back slowly, then strike unexpectedly. Finally, in 1781 with the aid of French allies--he forced the surrender of Cornwallis at Yorktown.



Washington longed to retire to his fields at Mount Vernon. Here I am in our visit in the summer of 2008 in the Washington, D.C. area. But Washington soon realized that the Nation, under its Articles of Confederation, was not functioning well, so he became a prime mover in the steps leading to the Constitutional Convention at Philadelphia in 1787. When the new Constitution was ratified, the Electoral College unanimously elected Washington President.



"He did not infringe upon the policy making powers that he felt the Constitution gave Congress. But the determination of foreign policy became preponderantly a Presidential concern. When the French Revolution led to a major war between France and England, Washington refused to accept entirely the recommendations of either his Secretary of State Thomas Jefferson, who was pro-French, or his Secretary of the Treasury Alexander Hamilton, who was pro-British. Rather, he insisted upon a neutral course until the United States could grow stronger. "To his disappointment, two parties were developing by the end of his first term. Wearied of politics, feeling old, he retired at the end of his second. In his Farewell Address, he urged his countrymen to forswear excessive party spirit and geographical distinctions. In foreign affairs, he warned against long-term alliances.



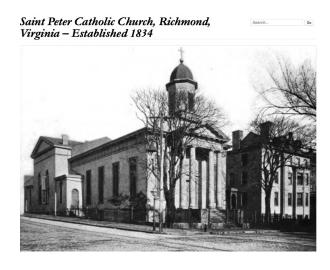
"Washington enjoyed less than three years of retirement at Mount Vernon, for he died of a throat infection December 14, 1799. For months, the Nation mourned him.

One of the famous paintings of George Washington and his troops in the American Revolution was that scene where they were poised on Christmas Day, 1776, on the banks of the Delaware River. They were in retreat from the British army. When winter came, many of Washington's soldiers were going to leave soon. Washington decided that, if they were going to fight at all, they would have to move quickly.

Washington decided to attack a group of Hessians, German soldiers who were paid to fight for the British, who were at Trenton, New Jersey. On Christmas night 1776, in a snowstorm, Washington took 2,400 of his 3,000 soldiers across the Delaware River to New Jersey. Washington decided to attack early in the morning of December 26, because he was sure that the Hessians would be tired from the celebration the night before. The river was icy. The army marched nine miles to outside Trenton. The American forces split into two groups. Both sides closed in together. The 1,200 Germans were completely surprised. The Hessians quickly surrendered after their leader, Colonel Rall, was killed. The Americans took more than 900 prisoners.

When the news of the British defeat got to lord Cornwallis, a British general stationed at New York, Cornwallis quickly moved his men toward Trenton. He was very determined to defeat Washington's army. But, while Cornwallis was determined, Washington made plans for his army. When Cornwallis arrived at Trenton, fires of the American troops were still burning, but Washington's army had secretly moved from the area. They went to Princeton, which was close. The British were marching in that direction and heard canon fire. Cornwallis rushed there, but it was too late. On January 3, 1777, the British troops at Princeton were defeated by Washington's army. Because Cornwallis' army was too worried about supplies and ammunition, they retreated to New York. The American army controlled New Jersey.

The bit of humor about the famous painting cited is to raise the question, "What issue did George Washington face on Christmas Day,1776, as he and his soldiers were poised on the banks of the Delaware River ... an issue that even today is faced in our political environment?" The answer is, "It



was the issue of row versus wade (1973 US Supreme case of Roe Vs. Wade - the famous abortion issue decision).

George and Martha were members of and worshiped regularly at <u>St.</u> <u>Peter's Parish Church, near Richmond, Virginia.</u>

George Washington created the Order of the Purple Heart on August 7,1782, a decoration to recognize merit in enlisted men and non-commissioned officers.

One character bears recognition in the story of the American Revolution and as a friend of General George Washington. <u>Haym Salomon</u> (also Solomon; April 7, 1740 – January 6, 1785) was a Polishborn American Jewish businessman and political financial broker who immigrated to New York City from Poland during the period of the American Revolution. He helped convert the French loans into ready cash by selling bills of exchange for Robert Morris, the Superintendent of Finance. In this way he aided the Continental Army and was possibly, along with Morris, the prime financier of the American side during the American Revolutionary War against Great Britain. It was estimated that the aid of Haym Salomon provided for George Washington's army's expenses \$650,000. Translated into 2013 American dollars, that is \$16,870,213!

There should be no doubt that there have been Jewish people close to the hearts of the needs and purposes of America in many regards and over many times!

George and Martha did not give issue to any children. However, Martha did have children from a previous marriage. So, there are no direct lineal descendants from President George Washington.

"When he died, Washington provided in his will for the emancipation of his slaves on the death of Martha, his wife. Washington was the only member of the Virginia dynasty to free all his slaves.

"Washington was one of the richest men in America. At his death, his holdings were worth about half a million dollars and included: 33,000 acres of land in Virginia, Kentucky, Maryland, New York, Pennsylvania, Washington, D.C. and the Northwest Territory; \$25,000 worth of stocks; 640 sheep, 329 cows, 42 mules and 20 workhorses.

"Things named after George Washington: one state, seven mountains, eight streams, ten lakes, 33 counties, nine colleges and 121 towns and villages."

Source: Marcus Cunliffe, "George Washington (New York: Mentor, 1958) Page 16.

George Washington was eulogized on December 26, 1799 by Col. Henry Lee as "first in war, first in peace and first in the hearts of his countrymen."

Chapter 47 Isaac Watts, the Father of English Hymnody

Sir Thomas Abney, was Lord Mayor of the City of London, England, England 1700 – 1702, and an Alderman on its City Council up through 1722 when he died. He was one of the men who founded the <u>Bank of England</u>, which operates today into the 21st Century.

His castle was outside the London area, and the serfs who farmed his land worshipped together with his family at the little church on their manor. It was a different church, in that it was a Reformation Church, rather than a Church of England. It was called the Chapel at Willesley.

Thomas Abney







Isaac Watts, the composer of many, many hymns, was a musician who played for and wrote much of the music sang by that congregation. He, of course, was a musician at other churches as well. His musical fame is broad and he is considered in England as the Father of Christian Hymnody. However, his connection to our family is that he was given lodging for the last 33 years of his life at the Thomas Abney Castle, and was considered a close 'adopted' family member.

Sir Thomas Abney is my 4_{th} cousin, <u>8 times removed</u>. Here is a genealogical chart to show how <u>Sir Thomas is related to me</u>.

Chapter 48 First Thanksgiving Celebration in Texas – 1598

The first Thanksgiving celebration to take place on ground that ultimately became the United States happened on April 28, 1598, twenty-two years earlier than the Plymouth Colony celebration.

It was a group of Spaniards, led by the Spanish explorer, Juan de Onate, that feasted on the banks of the Rio Grande after arriving near what now is El Paso, Texas. They had just made it through a 350-mile trek from Santa Barbara, Mexico, across the Chihauhuan Desert, so they had plenty to celebrate.

In 1990, the Texas Legislature passed a resolution recognizing San Elizario, Texas, on the outskirts of El Paso, as the site of the first true Thanksgiving. It is also of interest to note that my great uncle established a ranch close to San Elizario about 1899, some 301 years later, and he was elected a Texas Representative from that area in 1904.

My great uncle, <u>Alfred (Fred) Lansing Sharpe</u> was born in Ohio in 1858. He moved to Georgetown, Williamson County, Texas in 1882. He relocated to EI Paso County, Texas about 1899 to take up ranching. This was cutting edge adventure, as the county had only been organized since 1850. He became very successful at this ranching endeavor and was particularly known for his ability to supervise effectively the many workers, young and old, that were needed. His newly established U Bar Ranch was near the town of San Elizario and was along the Rio Grande, the river bordering the US with Mexico. The ranch was near the small town of Ysleta, which is the oldest town recognized in what is now the State of Texas, having had its beginnings attributed at about 1682. They resided in the city of El Paso.

I wonder whether my great uncle's ranch portion that was along the Rio Grand was land on which the first Thanksgiving in Texas cited above, described also as being along the Rio Grand in that area. My inquiry of the El Paso Historical Society and the Public Library of El Paso, along with a local historian to whom I was referred results in the situation that they really do not know the exact location of that first Thanksgiving beyond the description given above. So, I can only hope that our family was honored possibly to have had ranch land that shared the place of that wonderful celebration.

Source: "Texas Curiosities" by John Kelso, The Globe Pequot Press, Builford, Connecticut, 2000, page 160.

Chapter 49 The Plymouth Colony Thanksgiving Proclamation - 1621

"Inasmuch as the great Father has given us this year an abundant harvest of Indian corn, wheat, peas, beans, squashes, and garden vegetables, and has made the forests to abound with game and the sea with fish and clams, and inasmuch as he has protected us from the ravages of the savages, has spared us from pestilence and disease, has granted us freedom to worship God according to the dictates of our own conscience.

"Now I, your magistrate, do proclaim that all ye Pilgrims, with your wives and ye little ones, do gather at ye meeting house, on ye hill, between the hours of 9 and 12 in the day time, on Thursday, November 29th, of the year of our Lord one thousand six hundred and twenty-three and the third year since ye Pilgrims landed on ye Pilgrim Rock, there to listen to ye pastor and render thanksgiving to ye Almighty God for all His blessings."

William Bradford Ye Governor of Ye Colony

This was the first official act or proclamation made by Gov. Bradford. He is my eighth great grandfather.

Chapter 50 My Story Telling Series



The thought came to me that people have lots of stories that have been their experience in family, in occupation or in general life around us. The idea that such could be captured in brief snippets, to be preserved for our families and friends, would be a worthy project to pursue.

I submitted an article to our local

newspaper, the Wise County Messenger, advocating that people think about writing their histories in brief forms. It was my honor and pleasure that it was published.

Interest generated from comments received gave me the idea to initiate a writers' club, so to say. Some comments had been words to the effect that they wanted sample stories as a pattern to help them imagine how to compose their own stories.

Here's the link to the newspaper article:

http://www.dasharpe.com/Stories/Newspaper%20Article%20on%20Stor ies/Down%20in%20History.pdf



Will your family be remembered in history?

People of wisdom are quoted as saying that history repeats itself and that we can estimate what the future will hold by knowledge of history.

Those sayings generally speak corporately about nations and large groups. But recently personal history — the stories of interest among family members and relatives — has been in my thoughts.

There are so many stories among my family elders who have graduated on to heaven that have faded from memories of those of us remaining. Because they did not commit to writing their various stories, nor did any of us remaining relatives take occasions to interview them for material that we could write, we are poorer about our knowledge of them.

A motivation has come to me to address that issue in my family.

At age 75, I now realize that little is written about my life's experience, except what I have written for my genealogical files. Those writings are not distributed very widely.

The new self-assigned project on my plate is to begin a systematic compilation of events and stories in my past about which I would want my family and descendants to know.

The purpose of this letter is to exhort other people in the community to consider pursuing a course of action See Your views on page 7A





Continued from page 6A that would systematically capture things important and of interest to you that should be committed to writing and offered to family and friends.

My immediate project is to write about four to six stories annually and send them to relatives who've indicated to me they would like to receive them.

Sending by email is easiest, avoiding the cost of printing and postage. This not only provides for others the elements that shape your life and ambitions, but can highlight people known in the public domain who have crossed paths with you in some interesting way.

These stories also give the opportunity for you to incorporate something about your spiritual being and how you understand God's providence as displayed in your life.

These are all good things for your family and descendants to know about you.

I encourage you to initiate your own project that will enable your heritage and interests to be captured for the benefit of all who are or will be interested!

That is one fairly easy legacy you can leave for family, friends and loved ones.

> D.A. Sharpe Aurora

The solution was to propose a pattern of my creating a brief story, about once a quarter (4 times annually) to be sent to whatever list of people asked to be included in the subscription list. There would be no financial charges. My motivation was to encourage people to write for their families.

The proposal was circulated to several hundred friends and relatives, and about 100 have been on the regular distribution list since late 2014. Here is a brief description of the stories generated so far, and a link can take you to an online complete story. These are from three to 10 pages long, mostly shorter.

Here is the publishing schedule: http://www.dasharpe.com/Publishing%20Schedule.xlsx.pdf



<u>Black Tie & Boots Ball</u> story is about attending the 2005 U.S. Presidential Inauguration and social activities of President <u>George W. Bush</u>, one of our relatives! This event is sponsored by the <u>Texas State</u> <u>Society of Washington D. C</u>. Both Suzanne and I are annual

members of it. My own Congressional Representative that year, <u>Kay Granger</u> (Former <u>Mayor of Fort Worth</u>), was President of the TSWDC that year. It has photos and an embarrassing story about my seeking to purchase tickets to the Ball! This story is about 10 pages.





One Saturday morning, <u>Ruth Graham</u> (Billy's wife) phoned me with a strange request about <u>Corrie ten Boom</u>! It was quite a treat. It's three pages. <u>Here's</u> <u>the story!</u>



<u>Charles Wendell ("Chuck") Colson</u>, the high-level executive, the newly established position of the Director of the Office of Public Liaison, in President <u>Richard M. Nixon's</u> Whitehouse staff. He served as Special Counsel to President Nixon (an attorney role).



On March 1, 1974, Colson was indicted for conspiring to cover up the Watergate burglaries. After days of negotiation with Watergate Special Prosecutor Leon Jaworski and Watergate Trial Judge Gerhard Gesell, Colson pleaded guilty to <u>obstruction of justice</u>. Colson was convicted and served a prison sentence. This is a story about his coming out of prison, having become a Christian, and the stumbling start the ministry he developed had where we were close to see it happen. It's three pages.

<u>Meet Me in St. Louis</u> is the story about backgrounds Suzanne and me, leading up to our meeting, and our wild unplanned first date! It's fourteen pages. It's 14 pages.

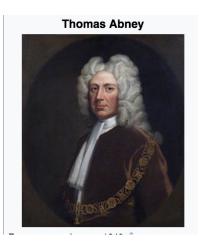


of

Isaac Watts



<u>Thomas Abney</u> was Mayor of London. His friend, <u>Isaac Watts</u>, was a significant person in the world of Christianity in those days in the early 1700s. It's three pages.





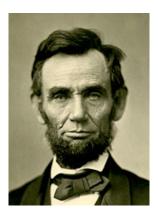
<u>Getting a Job in Dallas, looking in St. Louis</u>. This is one of those mid-life times without a professional job where God's Providential Hand manifests itself by taking you somewhere you didn't expect, but where you really wanted to go! This man is the Rev. Dr. B. Clayton Bell, a brother-in-law of Evangelist Billy Graham. This story is four pages long.

<u>One way to know what you don't know!</u> This is about getting something in Israel you can't read, but having what it says confirmed by an unbiased third-party in Florida! This story is three pages long.

Making an Ash of One's Self is the story of my quitting smoking on October 13, 1968 at 8:00 AM! It was kicked off by my co-worker, a Cuban immigrant! This story is two pages long.

<u>Abraham Lincoln</u> is, in some accounts, the most admired of our 45 United States Presidents. Of course, he is mentioned here because <u>he is my 33rd</u> <u>cousin, twice removed</u>! This story is seven pages long.

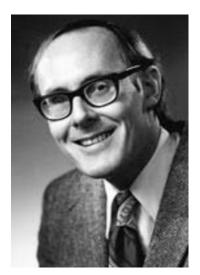
Relationship chart: <u>http://www.dasharpe.com/Genealogy/Charts/Lincoln,</u> <u>RoberttoDA.pdf</u>





<u>Baby Goats</u> is a humorous story about our daughter, Tiffany Sharpe Westmoreland, arranging for the baby goats (kids) born into their heard one season. This photo is Katherine handling one of the young goats. This story has lots of photographs and is in five pages.

Notice Who Sits at Your Feet: A story about Dr. Clark H. Pinnock, Internationally known theologian.



I was asked, unexpectedly, to give <u>a commencement address</u> for a small high school graduating class. It was somewhat of an unusual experience for me!



Getting out of Debt!



Chapter 51 Our Family's Connections to 17 of the 45 U.S. Presidents

It is an honor and privilege for a family to realize it has a family relationship to a President or Vice President of the United States. However, our family is, indeed, extremely blessed to have multiple such relationships. There are 17 out of 45 (38%) of the United States Presidents who have a relationship to our family, distant as they may be! Also, there are seven related Vice Presidents, five of whom became among the 17 U.S. Presidents.

This is a list of <u>all the Presidents of the United States</u> and the dates of their terms of service. If they have a relationship to our family, such relationship is described in the chart below. Here is a <u>more detailed Wikipedia</u> report on the US Presidents.

One observation of interest is to see the relationships Presidents had to each other. Though many connections could be examined, one interesting one is to note that twelve of the fourteen Presidents, included himself, are related to the first President, General George Washington. Though he had no descendants, he certainly came for fine genealogical stock that spawn significant leadership in the life of our nation.

Chapter 52 Our Family's Connections to 63 British Monarchs and Some Other International People of Significance

For the approximate 1,500 years shown in this chart, my relatives occupied an English throne and ruled England for about 90% of the time. Out of 77 Kings, Queens and Rulers listed, there are 63 (82% of them) who are related in my heritage.

Some are wonderful and some are embarrassing! There were about 100 years our family did not have the throne, and those years all were prior to William the Conqueror's Battle of Hastings in 1066, except for those seven years that Oliver and Richard Cromwell were Commonwealth rulers.

<u>Here is the chart</u> to reveal these wonderful relational connections.

Here's another chart that has some of the same Monarchs, plus some other non-British world leaders. There are a total of 20 European Monarchs and other leaders in this collection.

Chapter 53 Organizations of Which I Am a Member

Obviously, Suzanne and I have been very active in a church where ever we have lived. It always is an integral part of our lives and a source of warm fellowship and friendships. An expression on my Christian commitments is embodied in the various organizations I or we chose to join. Part of the call we feel God has for us is participation in our community at large.

Not only is that participation in some of the ordinary organizations one might expect, we have been involved <u>in family and genealogical, historical</u> and in <u>political organizations</u>.

To be a member of an organization, you apply for membership and pay dues, or you are elected to a position in an organization, or you are appointed to a position.

For example, I was appointed by our Wise County Judge to be Chairman of the Wise County Election Ballot Board, the group of citizens who oversee the election processes when they occur. The Aurora City Council appointed me Chairman of its Historical Preservation Commission.

There have been occasion for me to coach and mentor political candidates for office. Part of that has been to provide a guide for <u>Speaking and Writing Tips</u>. Associated with that mentoring, <u>a general course was developed</u> on government, political elements and how they all intermingle.

Here are the organizations:

<u>Christians United for Israel</u>. It advocates with Congress our support for good relations between our nation and Israel.

Ex-Students Association of the University of Texas

This is the alumni association for University of Texas students from the Austin, TX campus. The Life Member status began in 1963, the year following my graduation. My membership was the 742nd one. Today, there are over 90,000 members. In 2016, I learned that there were only 214 members still alive who joined prior to my membership!

US Selective Service System Local Board Member of the State of Texas

In case Congress institutes the military draft, this board would oversee

its process. My membership is in the North Texas area for the Draft Board. It is a federal level organization.

Sons of the Republic of Texas #7,961

This is a genealogical organization promoting Texas history. To be a member, you must document that you are descended directly from a citizen of the Republic of Texas, which existed 1835-1846. That citizen must have resided in Texas prior to February 19, 1846, the day the first State Governor of Texas, James Henderson, was sworn in, and the Republic of Texas' national authority was transferred to the United States of America. My membership was on October 27, 2005

Ephraim M. Doggett Fort Worth Chapter #36 of Sons of Republic of Texas This is the local chapter of the Sons of the SRT, for which I have served as webmaster, secretary and vice president, since 2005.



Texas Navy Association This is an organization of citizens who have been Commissioned by the Governor as an Admiral in the Texas Navy. It is an honorary action, bestowed upon people who have contributed in large measure to the good or benefit of the State of Texas. In our family, we are pleased that both Suzanne and I have been commissioned as Texas Admirals



(she by Gov. Gregory Abbott on March 27, 2015 and me by Gov. Rick Perry on July 16, 2008).

Texas State Historical Society is a State of Texas agency promoting Texas history

English-Speaking Union of the United States

This is a cultural interest organization which promotes knowledge and history of the relationships between England and the United States. We are members of the local chapter in Dallas, which provides dinners and monthly program. Our son, Taylor Marcus Sharpe also is a member and an officer in that chapter.

Sons of the American Revolution

This is a genealogical interest organization whose members have documented a direct lineal relationship with someone who served in the military or assisted the military in in the strive for independence from the rule of England in the <u>American Revolution</u>. I joined in 1988, member #131,981.

Texas Society of the Sons of the American Revolution

This is the State of Texas organization of the SAR (above), I am member #6,157.

Texas Society of the Sons of the American Revolution #6,157 -Dallas Chapter This is the Dallas local chapter which I joined in 1988.

The Texas Society of Washington, D. C.

This is a bi-partisan social organization of fellowship among Texans who reside in the Washington D.C. area, or who have occasions to frequent Washington D.C. It provides quarterly social events. It's most notable social event is the Black Tie & Boots Ball every four years, held on January 19, the evening prior to the Inauguration of the



U.S. President for the next four years. A uniqueness of this ball is that with



Barack Obama. In the photo are our D.C. lodging hosts and friends, mostly from Texas.

Here we are at the 2009 Black Tie & Boots Ball when Obama was Inaugurated. These are our D.C. hosts

the formal sartorial splendor expected, the attendees wear cowboy boots and hats, along with their black-tie formality. The President visits briefly during the Ball. Suzanne and I have attended two such balls for President George W. Bush and one for



and friends (one even a former from the CIA, but we can't identify him!)

Dallas Genealogical Society - Life Member #2,245 This organization chiefly pursues interest in Dallas & Texas History.

<u>Chapman Family Association</u> This is my mother's maiden name. This is a genealogical study organization. It includes <u>Johnny Appleseed!</u>

<u>Noxubee County (MS) Historical Society</u> This is the home county in Mississippi where my father-in-law is native and my wife grew up.

<u>Wise County (TX) Historical Society</u> - This is the organization interested in history and genealogy in Wise County, our chosen home county since 1999.

Chairman, Wise County Ballot Board - This is an appointed position, nominated by the Wise County Elections_Director, Sabra Srader, and <u>appointed by the County Judge, J. D.</u> <u>Clark.</u>

<u>Historical Preservation Commission</u>, <u>City of Aurora</u>, TX (Chairman), appointed by the City Council.

Prayer Leader Member at my Church, <u>EMIC</u>. Appointed by Prayer Ministry Director Ms. Iva Bennett.



Former Elected Chairman <u>Wise County Republican Party</u> (2000-2008)

Alternate Delegate from Texas to <u>2012 National Republican Convention</u> In the list of notable speakers, you can note Clint Eastwood, famous movie film star, and <u>my seventh cousin, three times removed</u>!

Recording Clerk for the <u>Wise Republican Women</u>, the Wise County affiliate of the <u>Texas Federation of Republican Women</u>.

<u>USS Fort Worth Steering Committee</u> is a Fort Worth area citizens group that supports the city's name-sake U.S. Naval Combat Ship, the USS Fort Worth. My service on it is a liason for the Ephraim M. Daggett Chapter of the Sons of the Republic of Texas, as well as formerly for the Nimitz Squadron of the Texas Navy Association.

Chapter 54 The Churches in My Life

Churches of membership, current and past:

Eagle Mountain International Church Newark, TX 2005 to present

<u>Here is a roster of the 54 staff at my church</u>, including staff titles. Many of them have biographical sketches or job descriptions available by clicking on the staff name under the photograph. Also, that click gives e-mail address access.

Highland Park Presbyterian Church, Dallas, TX 1982 - 2005

Central Presbyterian Church, Clayton, Saint Louis County, MO 1972-1982

Only 3 of the current 32 staff members were there when we moved in 1982 & only ONE of them were on the staff then!

*Canal Street Presbyterian Church, PCUS, New Orleans, LA 1962-1972 <u>Highland Park Presbyterian Church</u>, San Antonio, TX 1959-1962
*John Knox Presbyterian Church, Dallas, TX 1954-1959 <u>First Presbyterian Church</u>, Sweetwater, TX 1951-1954
*Trinity Presbyterian Church, Houston, TX 1951 (there 1949-51)
*Central Park Presbyterian Church, Houston, TX (there 1941-1949) <u>First Presbyterian Church</u>, <u>Ballinger, Runnels County, TX</u> (there 1939-1941)

*No longer exist as such, discontinued or merged

One thing that can be said about faithfulness to one's local church. To move around from church to church for whatever reason is not what seems what God's Providence would be for most of us. It has been our benefit never to have changed church memberships, except when we moved from one geographical location to another. We have not been eccleastical butterflies!

Chapter 55 Smith Wigglesworth's Family Line

Smith Wigglesworth (June 8, 1859 – March 12, 1947), was a British evangelist who was important in the early history of Pentecostalism. Smith Wigglesworth is a Christian man of exceedingly great statue in England and is garnered with a world-wide reputation as an effective servant of Jesus Christ.

We have genealogical information showing direct paternal descendants from <u>Osbern De Bolebec</u>, born about 970 AD in <u>Longueville</u>, <u>Normandy, France</u>. That family shows Smith Wigglesworth as in the 29th generation of it.

However, running an ancestor's report on Smith Wigglesworth, which continues through a maternal connection above Osbern De



Bolebec, Smith's family goes up 62 generations to Godwulf, who was born about 80 AD, living somewhere in Asgard, Asia or better described as East Europe.

Running a descendant's report from Godwulf down to our grandchildren is a <u>62-generation report taking 370 pages</u> to display. Chapter 57 gives more about <u>Godwulf</u>.

Smith Wigglesworth is the 32nd Great grandson of ancient English King of Wessex, <u>Aethelwulf</u> (806-858 AD), the 26th great grandfather of Edward Southworth, my 25th cousin, seven times removed, and the first husband of Alice Carpenter. Alice is my seventh great grandmother through her second husband, Plymouth Colony Governor William Bradford, one of the Mayflower passengers arriving in America in 1620.

Ethelwulf (as it also is spelled) is the 39th great grandfather of our Westmoreland grandchildren, Katherine (Katie), John David (Jack), twins Lily and Sarah and Samuel (Sam). The Westmoreland grandchildren are 33rd cousins, seven times removed to Smith Wigglesworth. My wife, Suzanne Margaret Boggess Sharpe, is related to Smith Wigglesworth through her marriage to me and to the cousin relationships described above.



Smith Wigglesworth was born in <u>Menston</u>, <u>Yorkshire, England</u>, to an impoverished family. As a small child, he worked in the fields pulling turnips alongside his mother; he also worked in factories. During his childhood, he was illiterate.

Nominally in his family who were Methodists, he became a born again Christian at the age of eight. His grandmother was a devout Methodist; his parents, John and Martha took young Smith to Methodist and Anglican churches on regular occasions. He was confirmed by a

Bishop in the Church of England, baptized by immersion in the Baptist Church and had the grounding in Bible teaching in the Plymouth Brethren while learning the plumbing trade as an apprentice from a man in the Brethren movement.

Wigglesworth married Polly Featherstone on 2 May 1882. At the time of their marriage, she was a preacher with the Salvation Army, and had come to the attention of <u>General William Booth</u>. They had one daughter, Alice, and four sons, Seth, Harold, Ernest and George. Polly died in 1913. His grandson, Leslie Wigglesworth, after more than 20 years as a missionary in the Congo, served as the president of the Elim Pentecostal Church.

Wigglesworth learned to read after he married Polly; she taught him to read the Bible. He often stated that it was the only book he ever read, and did not permit newspapers in his home, preferring the Bible to be their only reading material.

Wigglesworth worked as a plumber, but he abandoned this trade because he was too busy to do plumbing work after he started preaching. In 1907, Smith Wigglesworth visited Alexander Boddy during the Sunderland Revival. Following a laying-on of hands from Alexander's wife, Mary Boddy, he experienced speaking in tongues. He spoke at some of the Assemblies of God events in Great Britain. He also received ministerial credentials with the Assemblies of God in the United States, where he evangelized during the 1920s and later.

Wigglesworth believed that healing came through faith, and he was flexible in his approach. When he was forbidden to lay hands on audience members by the authorities in Sweden, he preached for a "corporate healing," by which people laid hands on themselves. He also practiced anointing with oil, and the distribution of "prayer handkerchiefs" (one of which was sent to King George V). Wigglesworth sometimes attributed ill-health to demons.

Wigglesworth was ministering at many churches throughout Yorkshire, often at Bethesda Church at Swallownest (on the outskirts of Sheffield), Wigglesworth claimed to have had many prophecies. He also had an international ministry: as well as Sweden, he ministered in the U.S., Australia, New Zealand, South Africa, the Pacific Islands, India, Ceylon, and several countries in Europe. Some of his sermons were transcribed for Pentecostal magazines, and these were collected into two books: Ever Increasing Faith and Faith that Prevails.

Much of Wigglesworth's ministry was focused on faith healing. He said God had healed him of appendicitis. Despite suffering from kidney stones which passed naturally in his later years, Wigglesworth refused any medical treatment. It was said he proclaimed that no knife would touch his body either in life or death. Supporters of Smith said they were miraculously healed with accounts being described in the popular press and in Pentecostal magazines. There were reports that people were raised from the dead, including his wife Polly.

Many people said they were cured of cancer by him. Wigglesworth, whose only training was as a plumber, described cancer as 'a living evil spirit', and insisted that many diseases were 'Satanic in origin'.

He continued to minister until the time of his death on March 12, 1947.

Chapter 56 George Eastman George Eastman

George Eastman (July 12, 1854 – March 14,1932) was an inventor in the photography field, specifically the invention of photographic film to replace photographic plates, thus leading to the technology used by film cameras prevalent in the 20th Century. I'm confident he would have marveled at the digital revolution dominant in the 21st Century. He was one of the founders of Eastman-Kodak Company. Unfortunately, the company essentially went out of



George Eastman (1854-1932)

business in the early 2000's, continuing only in a small niche of the market.

George is the sixth great grandson of Plymouth Colony Governor William Bradford, who is my seventh great grandfather. George is the sixth cousin, once removed to me. He is a sixth cousin, once removed to my son-in-law, Steven O. Westmoreland. George Eastman was an ingenious man who contributed greatly to the field of photography. He developed dry plates, film with flexible backing, roll holders for the flexible film, a Kodak camera (a convenient form of the camera for novices), and an amateur motion-picture camera. Through his experimental photography, he accumulated a large sum of money. His philanthropic personality prompted him to give his money to various business endeavors, including the University of Rochester.

He was a high school dropout, judged 'not especially gifted' when measured against the academic standards of the day. He was poor, but even as a young man, he took it upon himself to support his widowed mother and two sisters, one of whom was severely handicapped.

He began his business career as a 14-year old office boy in an insurance company and followed that with work as a clerk in a local bank.

He was George Eastman, and his ability to overcome financial adversity, his gift for organization and management, and his lively and inventive mind made him a successful entrepreneur by his mid-twenties, and enabled him to direct his Eastman Kodak Company to the forefront of American industry. But building a multinational corporation and emerging as one of the nation's most important industrialists required dedication and sacrifice. It did not come easily.

The youngest of three children, George Eastman was born to Maria Kilbourn and George Washington Eastman on July 12, 1854 in the village of <u>Waterville</u>, some 20 miles southwest of Utica, in upstate New York. The house on the old Eastman homestead, where his father was born and where George spent his early years, has since been moved to the <u>Genesee Country Museum in Mumford, N.Y.</u>, outside of Rochester.

When George was five years old, his father sold his nursery business and moved the family to Rochester. There the elder Eastman devoted his energy to establishing <u>Eastman Commercial College</u>. Then tragedy struck. George's father died, the college failed and the family became financially distressed.

George continued school until he was 14. Then, forced by family circumstances, he had to find employment.

His first job, as a messenger boy with an insurance firm, paid \$3 a week. A year later, he became office boy for another insurance firm. Through his own initiative, he soon took charge of policy filing and even wrote policies. His pay increased to \$5 per week.

But, even with that increase, his income was not enough to meet family expenses. He studied accounting at home evenings to get a better paying job.

In 1874, after five years in the insurance business, he was hired as a junior clerk at the <u>Rochester Savings Bank</u>. His salary tripled -- to more than \$15 a week.

When Eastman was 24, he made plans for a vacation to <u>Santo</u> <u>Domingo</u>. When a co-worker suggested he make a record of the trip, Eastman bought a photographic outfit with all the paraphernalia of the wet plate days.

The camera was as big as a microwave oven and needed a heavy tripod. And he carried a tent so that he could spread photographic emulsion on glass plates before exposing them, and develop the exposed plates before they dried out. There were chemicals, glass tanks, a heavy plate holder, and a jug of water. The complete outfit was a pack-horse load, as he described it. Learning how to use it to take pictures cost \$5.

Eastman did not make the Santo Domingo trip. But he did become completely absorbed in photography and sought to simplify the complicated process. He read in British magazines that photographers were making their own gelatin emulsions. Plates coated with this emulsion remained sensitive after they were dry and could be exposed at leisure. Using a formula taken from one of these British journals, Eastman began making gelatin emulsions.

He worked at the bank during the day and experimented at home in his mother's kitchen at night. His mother said that some nights Eastman was so tired he couldn't undress, but slept on a blanket on the floor beside the kitchen stove.

After three years of photographic experiments, Eastman had a formula that worked. By 1880, he had not only invented a dry plate formula, but had patented a machine for preparing large numbers of the plates. He quickly recognized the possibilities of making dry plates for sale to other photographers.

In April 1880, Eastman leased the third floor of a building on State Street in Rochester, and began to manufacture dry plates for sale. One of his first purchases was a second-hand engine priced at \$125. 'I really needed only a one horse-power.' he later recalled. 'This was a two horse-power, but I thought perhaps business would grow up to it. It was worth a chance, so I took it.'

As his young company grew, it faced total collapse at least once when dry plates in the hands of dealers went bad. Eastman recalled them and replaced them with a good product. 'Making good on those plates took our last dollar,' he said. 'But what we had left was more important -reputation.'

'The idea gradually dawned on me,' he later said, 'that what we were redoing was not merely making dry plates, but that we were starting out to make photography an everyday affair.' Or as he described it more succinctly 'to make the camera as convenient as the pencil.'

Eastman's experiments were directed to the use of a lighter and more flexible support than glass. His first approach was to coat the photographic emulsion on paper and then load the paper in a roll holder. The holder was used in view cameras in place of the holders for glass plates.

The first film advertisements in 1885 stated that shortly there will be introduced a new sensitive film which, it is believed, will prove an

economical and convenient substitute for glass dry plates both for outdoor and studio work.

This system of photography using roll holders was immediately successful. However, paper was not entirely satisfactory as a carrier for the emulsion, because the grain of the paper was likely to be reproduced in the photo.





Eastman's solution was to coat the paper with a layer of plain, soluble gelatin, and then with a layer of insoluble light-sensitive gelatin. After exposure and development, the gelatin bearing the image was stripped from the paper, transferred to a sheet of clear gelatin, and varnished with collodion -- a cellulose solution that forms a tough, flexible film.

As he perfected transparent roll film and the roll holder, Eastman changed the whole direction of his work and established the base on which his success in amateur photography would be built.

He later said: 'When we started out with our scheme of film photography, we expected that everybody who used glass plates would take up films. But we found that the number which did so was relatively small. In order to make a large business we would have to reach the general public.'

Eastman's faith in the importance of advertising, both to the company and to the public, was unbounded. The very first Kodak products were advertised in leading papers and periodicals of the day -- with ads written by Eastman himself.

Eastman coined the slogan, 'you press the button, we do the rest,' when he introduced the Kodak camera in 1888 (his patent was awarded September 4, 1888) and within a year, it became a well-known phrase. Later, with advertising managers and agencies carrying out his ideas, magazines, newspapers, displays and billboards bore the Kodak banner.

Space was taken at world expositions, and the Kodak Girl, with the style of her clothes and the camera she carried changing every year, smiled

351

engagingly at photographers everywhere. In 1897, the word Kodak sparkled from an electric sign on London's Trafalgar Square --one of the first such signs to be used in advertising.

Today, company advertising appears around the world and the trademark Kodak, coined by Eastman himself, is familiar to nearly everyone.

The word Kodak was first registered as a trademark in 1888. There has been some fanciful speculation, from time to time, on how the name was originated. But the plain truth is that Eastman invented it out of thin air.

He explained: I devised the name myself. The letter 'K' had been a favorite with me -- it seems a strong, incisive sort of letter. It became a question of trying out a great number of combinations of letters that made words starting and ending with 'K.' The word 'Kodak' is the result. Kodak's distinctive yellow trade dress, which Eastman selected, is widely known throughout the world and is one of the company's more valued assets.

Thanks to Eastman's inventive genius, anyone could now take pictures with a handheld camera simply by pressing a button. He made photographers of us all. He was a modest, unassuming man... an inventor, a marketer, a global visionary, a philanthropist, and a champion of inclusion.

Eastman died on March 14, 1932 at the age of 77. Plagued by progressive disability resulting from a hardening of the cells in the lower spinal cord, Eastman became increasingly frustrated at his inability to maintain an active life, and set about putting his estate in order.

Eastman was a stupendous factor in the education of the modern world, said an editorial in the New York Times following his death. Of what he received in return for his great gifts to the human race, he gave generously for their good; fostering music, endowing learning, supporting science in its researches and teaching, seeking to promote health and lessen human ills, helping the lowliest in their struggle toward the light, making his own city a center of the arts and glorifying his own country in the eyes of the world.

During his lifetime, he gave away an estimated \$75 to \$100 million, mostly to the <u>University of Rochester</u> and the <u>Massachusetts Institute of</u> <u>Technology</u> (under the name of 'Mr. Smith'). The Rochester Institute of Technology has a building dedicated to Mr. Eastman, in recognition of his support and substantial donations. MIT has a plaque of Eastman (the rubbing of which is traditionally considered by students to bring good luck) in recognition of his donation. Eastman also made substantial gifts to the Tuskegee Institute and the Hampton Institute. Upon his death, his entire residuary estate went to the University of Rochester. His former home at 900 East Avenue in Rochester was opened as the <u>George</u> <u>Eastman House International Museum of Photography and Film</u> in 1947. On the 100th anniversary of his birth in 1954, Eastman was honored with a postage stamp from the United States Post Office.

In 1907, Eastman's mother died, devastating him completely. His close relationship with Josephine Dickman deepened after this, but, despite many speculations about them marrying, he remained a lifelong bachelor. He mellowed somewhat, though, and became interested in philanthropy. He gave huge donations to MIT, the Hampton



Institute, the Tuskegee Institute, and the Rochester University, creating the Eastman School of Music at the latter. He opened the Eastman Theater in Rochester, with a chamber-music hall, the Kilbourn Theater, in his mother's honor.

Information for this composure about George Eastman came from numerous on-line searches. If you need URL confirmation for any aspects, contact me for documentation.

Chapter 57 Godwulf – My earliest lateral ancestor

The earliest known relative in my family is <u>Godwulf</u>, who is a figure in the Anglo-Saxon royal genealogies. Anglo-Saxon royal genealogies refer collectively to the genealogies of the pre-Viking Anglo-Saxon kingdoms of Britain. These trace the royal families through legendary kings and heroes, <u>through myths</u>, and usually an eponymous ancestor of their clan, and in most cases converge on <u>Woden</u>. In their fully elaborated forms, they continue the pedigrees back to patriarchs <u>Noah</u> and <u>Adam</u>, but are not viewed as a reflection of authentic history.

Godwulf was born about 80 AD. He heads the longest genealogical line recorded in my files, covering 67 generations. That shows easily that a generation averages about 29 years. That is the time between a person's birth and the first child given issue by that person.

Godwulf is the 65th great grandfather of my <u>Westmoreland grandchildren</u>, though he is not directly related to me. Godwulf's descendants travel down through the family line of my son-in-law, <u>Steven O. Westmoreland</u>.

Godwulf can be described in relation to my family's lines as the 34th great grandfather of the 14th great grand uncle of <u>Edward Southworth</u>, the first husband of my 7th great grandmother, <u>Alice Carpenter</u>. My descending from Alice is through her second husband, Plymouth Colony <u>Governor William Bradford</u>, known as one of the leaders among the people of the Mayflower ship that landed in what later became known as <u>Massachusetts Bay</u>.

This very long genealogical line ties into my most lengthy genealogical line, the one going back to <u>Halfdan Vanha Sveidasson</u>, the Earle of the Uplands in Norway. <u>Halfdan Vanha Sveidasson</u> was a Viking born about 750 AD. Halfdan Vanha Sveidasson is my 34th great grandfather. Halfdan Vanha Sveidasson's family line and Godwulf's family line came together in the person of French born <u>English King Henry II</u>.

King Henry II came from the Plantagenet (pronounced planTAJ uh niht), which was the family name of a line of kings that ruled England from 1154 to 1399. These kings descended from the marriage of Matilda, daughter of King Henry I, to <u>Geoffrey, count of Anjou, France</u>. Geoffrey was

nicknamed Plantagenet, because he wore a sprig of the broom (genet) plant in his cap. Numerous historians also call these kings Angevins, meaning from Anjou. The Plantagenet dynasty began with Henry II, son of Matilda and Geoffrey. Henry is my 9th cousin, 24 times removed, as well as the 14th great grandfather of the first husband of Alice Carpenter, my seven times great grandmother. Henry II is the 10th great grandson of Halfdan Vanha Sveidasson and the 35th great grandson of Godwulf.

Godwulf's birth occurred just months following the event of <u>Mount Vesuvius</u> <u>erupting on August 24, 79 AD</u>, burying the Roman cities of <u>Pompeii</u> and <u>Herculaneum</u> in volcanic ash. An estimated 20,000 people died.

Godwulf came about on this earth in the days that the Biblical New Testament were just being completed. The concluding book of the Bible, "Revelation, was written when Christians were entering a time of persecution. The two periods most often mentioned are the latter part of Nero's reign (54-68 AD) and the latter part of Domitian's reign (81-96 AD). Most scholars date the book by the Apostle John about 95 AD. A few suggest a date during the reign of Vespasian: 69-79 AD." Other New Testament writings were being wrapped up in the era of Godwulf's birth.

Source: "The New International Version Study Bible," editor Kenneth Barker, Zondervan, publishers, Grand Rapids, Michigan 49530, 1984,page 1,522

The Gospel of Jesus Christ was beginning to grow across the world. However, it would be the 17th generation from Godwulf before Christianity came into this family line.

Of course, one of the most famous Post Biblical events to occur to the Israelite nation was the destruction of the Temple at Jerusalem in 70 AD, just a decade prior to Godwulf's birth.

In Godwulf's lifetime, when Trajan was Emperor of Rome (98-116), the Roman Empire reached its greatest geographical extent.

Source: "The Timetables of History," Bernard Grun, a Touchstone Book, published by Simon & Schuster, New York, 1975 ISBN 0-671-74919-6, page 26

Not much is known about Godwulf, the man. It is said that he is from Norse traditions. Norse is of or relating to medieval Scandinavia or its peoples,

languages, or cultures. It is of or relating to Norway or its people, language, or culture. Norse is relating to, or being the branch of the North Germanic languages that includes Norwegian, Icelandic, and Faroese. All of this is a pre-Christian time for this part of the world.

Source: http://dictionary.reference.com/browse/Norse

An extensive discourse is posted about the people of Godwulf and his descendants at this URL:

http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Norse_mythology

Be aware, in this context, that the term, "mythology" means experiences of human kind allegedly encountering the Devine. That would include the God (and Trinity) of the Bible as well as the false deities of what is called by various names, such as "Greek mythology." A myth is a traditional or legendary story, usually concerning some being or hero or event, with or without a determinable basis of fact or a natural explanation, especially one that is concerned with deities or demigods and explains some practice, rite, or phenomenon of nature.

Source: http://dictionary.reference.com/browse/myth

Other reports which account events of 80 AD or close to it:

#Year 80 was a leap year starting on Saturday of the Julian calendar.

The Emperor Titus inaugurates the Colosseum with 100 days of games.

The earliest stage of Lullingstone Roman villa was built (approximate date).

The Roman occupation of Britain reached the River Tyne-Solway Firth frontier area (approximate date).

The original Roman Pantheon was destroyed in a fire, together with many other buildings.

The Eifel Aqueduct was constructed to bring water 95 km (60 miles) from the Eifel region to Colonia Claudia Ara Agrippinensum (modern Cologne).

The first African enters the Roman Senate

#The <u>aeolipile</u>, the first steam engine, is invented by Hero of Alexandria.

#The Gospel of Luke and Acts are written approximate date).

#The Gospel according to Matthew is translated into Greek.

#Saint Timothy, bishop of Ephesus died in 80 A.D. (traditional date)

Source: http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/80

This series of genealogical and historical events have been compiled for the information and enjoyment of interested persons. Obviously, dates and facts claimed to have ancient origins, chiefly prior to the 1600s, are often not considered reliable by serious historians. However, they do reflect ideas and notions people researching history have felt likely took place. It is in those senses that I hope the reader enjoys this effort.

The genealogical descendants report I have for <u>Godwulf is 370 pages</u>. You may download it here, if you wish.

Chapter 58 The Legendary J. P. Morgan

-John Pierpont Morgan (known best simply as J. P. Morgan) is my fourth cousin, three times removed. The ancestor in common with us is <u>Samuel Spen</u>cer (1670 - 1756), my sixth great grandfather, and Morgan's third great grandfather.



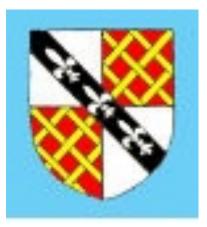
John Pierpont Morgan was an American financier, banker, philanthropist, and art collector who dominated corporate finance and industrial consolidation during his time. In 1892 Morgan arranged the merger of Edison <u>General Electric</u> and Thompson-Houston Electric Company to form General Electric. After financing the creation of the Federal Steel Company, he merged the <u>Carnegie Steel Company</u> and several other steel and iron businesses to form the <u>United</u> <u>States Steel Corporation</u> in 1901, the

year of my father's birth.

J. P. Morgan is the 3^{rd} great grandson of Samuel Spencer (1670 – 1756). Spencer had another 3^{rd} great grandchild, Sarah Lavenna Kellogg, who married John Elsefer Sharp II, my great grandfather. Sarah gave birth to my father in 1901. The Spencer's are a family that came to America in the 1600's, with a strong tradition back to England with information in my records to the 1400's, the earliest being John Spencer, my 12th great grandfather, (1482 – 1532), who lived and died in South Myles, Bedfordshire, England. Here's the Spencer Family Crest:

<u>Here is a chart to show my relationship to J. P.</u> Morgan.

Here's my relationship to <u>Robert Spencer</u>, my 14th great grandfather.



J. P. Morgan was born in Hartford, Connecticut to Junius Spencer Morgan (1813-1890) and Juliet Pierpont (1816-1884) of Boston, Massachusetts. Pierpont, as he preferred to be known, had a varied education, due in part to interference by his father, Junius. In the fall of 1848, Pierpont transferred to the Hartford Public School, and then to the <u>Episcopal Academy in Cheshire (now called Cheshire</u> <u>Academy</u>), boarding with the principal. In September 1851, Morgan passed the entrance exam for <u>English High School of Boston</u>, a school specializing in mathematics to prepare young men for careers in commerce.

In the spring of 1852, illness that was to become more common as his life progressed struck; rheumatic fever left him in so much pain that he could not walk. Junius booked passage for Pierpont straight away on the ship owned by Charles Dabney, to the <u>Azores (Northern Portuguese islands</u>) for him to recover. After convalescing for almost a year, Pierpont returned to the school in Boston to resume his studies. After graduating, his father sent him to Bellerive, a school near the Swiss village of Vevey. When Morgan had attained fluency in French, his father sent him to the <u>University of Göttingen</u> order to improve his German. Attaining a passable level of German within six months, Morgan traveled back to London via Wiesbaden, his education complete. Morgan entered banking in 1857 at his father's London branch, moving to New York City the next year, where he worked at the banking house of Duncan, Sherman & Company, the American representatives of George Peabody & Company. From 1860 to 1864, as J. Pierpont Morgan & Company, he acted as agent in New York for his father's firm. By 1864-72, he was a member of the firm of Dabney, Morgan & Company; in 1871, he partnered with the Drexel's of Philadelphia to form the New York firm of Drexel, Morgan & Company.

During the War Between the States (the Civil War), Morgan was approached to finance the purchase of antiquated rifles being sold by the army for \$3.50 each. Morgan's partner re-machined them and sold the rifles back to the army for \$22 each. The military knew it was buying back its own guns, so the so-called 'scandal' turned out to be more about government inefficiency than any chicanery by Morgan (who never even saw the guns and acted only as a lender). Morgan himself, like many wealthy persons, including future Democratic president Grover Cleveland, avoided military service by paying \$300 for a substitute.

After the 1893 death of <u>Anthony Drexel</u>, the firm was re-christened J.P. Morgan & Company in 1895, and retained close ties with Drexel & Company of Philadelphia, Morgan, Harjes & Company of Paris, and J. S. Morgan & Company (after 1910 Morgan, Grenfell & Company), of London. By 1900, it was one of the most powerful banking houses of the world, carrying through many deals especially reorganizations and consolidations. Morgan had many partners over the years, such as George W. Perkins, but remained firmly in charge.

Morgan's ascent to power was accompanied by dramatic financial battles. He wrested control of the <u>Albany and Susquehanna Railroad</u> from <u>Jay Gould</u> and <u>Jim Fisk</u> in 1869. He led the syndicate that broke the government financing privileges of <u>Jay Cooke</u>, and soon became deeply involved in developing and

financing a railroad empire by reorganizations and consolidations in all parts of the United States.

He raised large sums in Europe, but instead of only handling the funds, he helped the railroads reorganize and achieve greater efficiencies. He fought against the speculators interested in speculative profits, and built a vision of an integrated transportation system. In 1885, he reorganized the New York, West Shore & Buffalo Railroad, leasing it to the <u>New York Central</u>. In 1886, he reorganized the Philadelphia & Reading, and in 1888 the Chesapeake& Ohio. He was heavily involved with railroad tycoon James J. Hill and the Great Northern Railway.

After Congress passed the Interstate Commerce Act in 1887, Morgan setup conferences in 1889 and 1890 that brought together railroad presidents to help the industry follow the new laws and write agreements for the maintenance of public, reasonable, uniform and stable rates. The conferences were the first of their kind, and by creating a community of interest among competing lines, paved the way for the great consolidations of the early 20th century.

Morgan's process of taking over troubled businesses to reorganize them was known as *Morganization*. Morgan reorganized business structures and management to return them to profitability. His reputation as a banker and financier also helped bring interest from investors to the businesses he took over.

In 1895, at the depths of the Panic of 1893, the Federal Treasury was nearly out of gold. <u>President Grover Cleveland</u> arranged for Morgan to create a private syndicate on Wall Street to supply the U.S. Treasury with \$65 million in gold, half of it from Europe, to float a bond issue that restored the treasury surplus of \$100 million. The episode saved the Treasury, but hurt Cleveland with the agrarian wing of his Democratic party, and became an issue in the election of 1896, when banks came under withering attack from William Jennings Bryan. Morgan and Wall Street bankers donated heavily to <u>Republican William</u> <u>McKinley</u>, who was elected in 1896 and reelected in 1900 on a gold standard platform.

In 1902, J. P. Morgan & Co. purchased the <u>Leyland line of Atlantic steamships</u> and other British lines, creating an Atlantic shipping combine, the International Mercantile Marine Company, which eventually became the owner of <u>White Star</u> <u>Line</u>, builder and operator of <u>RMS Titanic</u>.

After the death of his father in 1890, Morgan took control of J. S. Morgan & Co (re-named Morgan, Grenfell & Company in 1910). Morgan began talks with <u>Charles M. Schwab</u>, president of Carnegie Co., and businessman Andrew Carnegie in 1900 with the intention of buying Carnegie's business and several other steel and iron businesses to consolidate them to create the <u>United States</u> <u>Steel Corporation</u>. Carnegie agreed to sell the business to Morgan for \$480 million. The deal was closed without lawyers and without a written contract. News of the industrial consolidation arrived at newspapers in mid-January 1901. U.S. Steel was founded later that year and was the first billiondollar company in the world with an authorized capitalization of \$1.4 billion.

U.S. Steel aimed to achieve greater economies of scale, reduce transportation and resource costs, expand product lines, and improve distribution. It was also planned to allow the United States to compete globally with Britain and Germany. U.S. Steel's size was claimed by Schwab and others to allow the company to pursue distant international markets-globalization. U.S. Steel was regarded as a monopoly by critics, as the business was attempting to dominate not only steel, but also the construction of bridges, ships, railroad cars and rails, wire, nails, and a host of other products. With U.S. Steel, Morgan had captured two-thirds of the steel market, and Schwab was confident that the company would soon hold a 75 percent market share. However, after 1901 the businesses' market share dropped; Schwab, himself, played an important role in falsifying his own prediction: finding the new company unwieldy, Schwab resigned from U.S. Steel in1903 to form Bethlehem Steel, which became the second largest U.S. producer on the strength of such innovations as the wide flange H beam, precursor to the I-beam widely used in construction.

Enemies of banking attacked Morgan for the terms of his loan of gold to the federal government in the 1895 crisis, for his financial resolution of the Panic of 1907, and for bringing on the financial ills of the New York, New Haven and Hartford Railroad. In December1912, Morgan testified before the Pujo Committee, a subcommittee of the House Banking and Currency committee. The committee ultimately found that a cabal of financial leaders were abusing their public trust to consolidate control over many industries: the partners of J.P. Morgan & Co., along with the directors of First National and National City Bank, controlled aggregate resources of \$22.245 billion. Louis Brandeis, later a U.S. Supreme Court Justice, compared this sum to the value of all the property in the twenty-two states west of the Mississippi River.

In 1900, Morgan financed inventor Nikola Tesla and his Wardenclyffe Tower with \$150,000 for experiments in radio. However, in 1903, when the tower structure was near completion, it was still not yet functional, due to last-minute design changes that introduced an unintentional defect. When Morgan wanted to know Where can I put the meter? Tesla had no answer. Tesla's vision of free power did not agree with Morgan's worldview; nor would it pay for the maintenance of the transmission system. Construction costs eventually exceeded the money provided by Morgan, and additional financiers were reluctant to come forth. By July 1904, Morgan (and the other investors) finally decided they would not provide any additional financing. Morgan also advised other investors to avoid the project.

364

At the height of Morgan's career during the early 1900s, he and his partners controlled directly and indirectly assets worth \$1.3 billion.

Morgan was a lifelong member of the Episcopal Church, and by 1890 was one of its most influential leaders.

In 1861, he married Amelia Sturges, known as Mimi (1835-1862). After her death the next year, he married Frances Louisa Tracy, known as Fanny (1842 - 1924) on May 3, 1863. They had four children.

He often had a tremendous physical effect on people; one man said that a visit from Morgan left him feeling 'as if a gale had blown through the House. Morgan was physically large with massive shoulders, piercing eyes and a purple nose, because of a chronic skin disease, rosacea. His grotesquely deformed nose was due to a disease called rhinophyma, which can result from rosacea. As the deformity worsens, pits, nodules, fissures, lobulations, and pedunculation contort the nose into grotesque cosmetic problems. This condition inspired the crude taunt 'Johnny Morgan's nasal organ has a purple hue.' Surgeons could have shaved away the rhinophymous growth of sebaceous tissue during Morgan's lifetime, but as a child Morgan suffered from infantile seizures, and it is suspected that he did not seek surgery for his nose, because he feared the seizures would return.

His social and professional self-confidence were too well established to be undermined by this affliction. It appeared as if he dared people to meet him squarely and not shrink from the sight, asserting the force of his character over the ugliness of his face. He was known to dislike publicity and hated being photographed; because of his self-consciousness of his rosacea, all his professional portraits were retouched. Morgan smoked dozens of cigars per day, and favored large Havana cigars dubbed Hercules' Clubs by observers.

His home on Madison Avenue was the first electrically lit private residence in New York. His interest in the new technology was a result of his financing Thomas Edison's Edison Electric Illuminating Company in 1878. J. P. Morgan also owned East Island in Glen Cove, NY where he had a large summer house.

J. P. Morgan's yacht, <u>Corsair</u>, later bought by the U.S. Government and renamed the USS Gloucester to serve in the <u>Spanish-American War</u>. This is a War in which my grandfather, Henry (Harry) Seth Sharpe served in the United States Army, having been recruited by 1st Volunteer Cavalry Officer, Teddy Roosevelt (who is a 5th cousin to my half 8th cousin). An avid yachtsman, Morgan owned several sizable yachts.

The well-known quote, 'If you have to ask the price, you can't afford it' is commonly attributed to Morgan in response to a question about the cost of maintaining a yacht, but the actual wording of the original statement is a bit obscure.

Morgan was scheduled to travel on the maiden voyage of RMS Titanic, but canceled at the last minute. The Titanic was owned and operated by the White Star Line, and Morgan had his very own private suite and promenade deck on the ship.

Morgan died while traveling abroad in Rome. On March 31, 1913, just shy of his seventy-sixth birthday, Morgan died in his sleep at the Grand Hotel. Nearly 4,000 condolence letters were received there overnight and flags on Wall Street flew at half-staff. The stock market was also closed for two hours when his body passed through Wall Street.

At the time of his death, he had an estate worth \$68.3 million (\$1.39 billion in today's dollars), of which about \$30 million represented his share in the New York and Philadelphia banks. The value of his art collection was estimated at \$50 million. J. P. Morgan was bequeathed much of his large art collection to the Metropolitan Museum of Art in New York City and to the Wadsworth Atheneum of Hartford, Connecticut. He died in Rome, Italy, in 1913 at the age of 75, leaving his fortune and business to his son, John Pierpont (Jack) Morgan, Jr.

His remains were interred in the Cedar Hill Cemetery in his birthplace of Hartford, Connecticut. His son, J. P. Morgan, Jr., inherited the banking business.

Morgan was a notable collector of books, pictures, and, other art objects, many loaned or given to the Metropolitan Museum of Art (of which he was president and was a major force in its establishment), and many housed in his London house and in his private library on 36th Street, near Madison Avenue in New York City. His son, J. P. Morgan, Jr., made the Pierpont Morgan Library a public institution in 1924 as a memorial to his father, and kept <u>Belle da Costa Greene</u>, his father's private librarian, as its first director. Morgan was painted by many artists, including the Peruvian Baca Flor and the Swiss-born American Adolfo Muller-Ury, who also painted a double portrait of Morgan with his favorite grandchild, Mabel Satterlee, that for some years stood on an easel in the Satire mansion, but has now disappeared.

By the turn of the century J. P. Morgan had become one of America's most important collectors of gems and had assembled the most important gem collection in the U.S., as well as of American gemstones (over1,000 pieces). Tiffany & Company assembled his first collection under their 'chief gemologist' George Frederick Kunz. The collection was exhibited at the World's Fair in Paris in 1889. The exhibit won two golden awards and drew the attention of important scholars, lapidaries and the public.

George Frederick Kunz then continued to build a second, even finer, collection which was exhibited in Paris in 1900. Collections have been donated to the <u>American Museum of Natural History in New York</u> where they were known as the Morgan-Tiffany and the Morgan-Bement collections. In 1911, Kunz named a newly found gem after his biggest customer: <u>Morganite</u>.

Morgan was a benefactor of the American Museum of Natural History, the <u>Metropolitan Museum of Art, Groton School</u>, Trinity College, the <u>Lying-in</u> <u>Hospital of the City of New York</u>, the New York trade schools. and <u>Harvard</u> <u>University (especially its medical school)</u>. Our family connection with Harvard is that <u>Howard Pelham</u>, its first Treasurer, was the 2nd great grandnephew of the wife of the 3rd cousin, 5 times removed from the husband of the stepdaughter of my 6th great granduncle.

Morgan was also a patron to photographer Edward S. Curtis, offering Curtis \$75,000 in 1906, for a series on the Native Americans. Curtis eventually published a 20-volume work entitled, 'The North American Indian.' Curtis went on to produce in 1914 a motion picture, "In The Land Of The Head Hunters," which was later restored in 1974 and re-released as 'In The Land Of The War Canoes.' Curtis was also famous for a 1911 Magic Lantern slide show, 'The Indian Picture Opera,' which used his photos and original musical compositions by composer Henry F. Gilbert.

His son, J. P. Morgan, Jr. took over the business at his father's death, but was never as influential. As required by the 1933 Glass-Steagall Act, the 'House of Morgan' became three entities: J. P. Morgan and Co., and its bank, Morgan Guaranty Trust; Morgan Stanley, an investment house; and Morgan Grenfell in London, an overseas securities house. There is now a restaurant in <u>Montpelier</u>, <u>Verm</u>ont named after J. P. Morgan, the gemstone Morganite was named in his honor.

In his satirical history of the United States, <u>'It All Started with Columbus</u>,' Richard Armour commented that 'Morgan, who was a direct sort of person, made his money in money ... He became immensely wealthy because of his financial interests, most of which were around eight or ten percent ... This Morgan is usually spoken of as J.P. to distinguish him from <u>Henry Morgan, the</u> <u>pirate</u>.'

Bertolt Brecht, the German writer, based the figure of Pierpont Mauler the beef tycoon in his <u>play Saint Joan of the Stockyards</u>, on Morgan.

In the musical <u>'How to Succeed in Business Without Really Trying</u>, 'the character J. Pierrepont Finch is portrayed as a rising, powerful businessman; his character is possibly an allegory of Morgan's. The character Mr. Bratt alludes to the nominal similarity in the beginning of the show: 'Pierrepont. Say, maybe that ought to be J. Pierrepont Finch.'

J. P. Morgan appears in <u>E. L. Doctorow's novel "Ragtime</u>," and in the Broadway musical inspired by it of the same name.

J.P. Morgan is mentioned, by name, by Oliver Warbucks in the <u>Broadway</u> <u>musical, 'Annie.'</u>

J.P. Morgan is mentioned in F. Scott Fitzgerald's famous novel, <u>'The Great</u> Gatsby.' J.P. Morgan is also mentioned in John Steinbeck's novel, 'The Grapes of Wrath.'

The name J.P. Morgan is mentioned in the song 'We Got Elegance' in the Jerry Herman <u>musical 'Hello, Dolly!</u>'

Carlito Brigante is likened to J. P. Morgan in the 1993 film 'Carlito's Way.'

J.P. Morgan is also mentioned in the novel <u>'Against the Day,' by Thomas</u> <u>Pynchon.</u>

A satirical version of J. P. Morgan appears in Matt Fraction and Steven Sanders' graphic novel, 'The Five Fists of Science.'

In <u>'The Wind and the Lio</u>n,' Theodore Roosevelt mockingly toasts Morgan and refers to him as (aside from the Raisuli) 'the only real pirate I know.' [<u>Theodore</u> is the fifth cousin to Franklin Delano Roosevelt, my half eighth cousin]

The source for much of this information is: http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/J._P._Morgan

The Chase Manhattan Bank (founded 9/1/1799) until it merged with J.P. Morgan & Co. in the year, 2000. Chase Manhattan Bank was formed by the merger of the Chase National Bank and The Manhattan Company in 1955. The bank has been headquartered in Columbus, Ohio since its merger with BankOne Corporation in 2004.

I'm pleased to say that in 2017, there was occasion for Suzanne and me to change banks, and our new accounts are at the Chase Bank! It's fun and comforting to think that our bank is so much in our family!



Below is a current article about our family bank!





Chapter 59 My Mother, Martha Dixon Chapman Sharpe

My mother, Martha Dixon Chapman, was born April 5,1904, the year that Theodore Roosevelt had his first election to the Presidency of the United States, after having succeeding William McKinley who was assassinated while President. This was the year that author Jack London published *The Sea-Wolf*. Puccini's *Madame Butterfly* opera opened in Milan, Italy. Work began on the Panama Canal. The Rolls-Royce Company was founded in England. Helen Keller graduated from Radcliffe College and the Broadway subway opened in New York City.

(Source: "The Timetables of History" 3rd Revised Edition, Bernard Grun, Simon & Schuster, New York 1991, pages 456-457)

Martha was born in her Lufkin home at 419 Abney Avenue. Living on a street with your family name is a hint as to the place the family held in the eye of the community. Her mother's maiden name was Margaret Lavina Abney. Her church life was in the First Methodist Church. Martha was age five when her mother died, and age 21 when her father died,



which was a hardship. She and her younger brother, Herschell Albert Chapman, were raised after their Mother's 1909 death by their grandmother and grandfather, Martha Jane Dixon Abney and James William Abney. Dr. James Herschell Chapman, their father, resided with them in the Abney home for a while.

Martha Jane Dixon Abney, Martha's grandmother, was widowed in 1913, and Dr. Chapman soon moved out from the house. He had been much older than his wife, Maggie, being only one year younger than his mother-in-law, Martha Jane Dixon Abney. Family oral tradition reported that he felt it was more appropriate to move out, as it did not reflect the proper appearances for an unmarried man and woman so close in age to be domiciled together.

Maggie continued to raise his children, Herschell and Martha, in her home. After Dr. Chapman married the third and last time, to a woman named Josephine, his contacts with the Abney family apparently became somewhat detached, or at least the recording of continuing relationship has not been identified by me.

Martha had a high school teacher of science about 1919 or so, named Mr. Blevins. It is of interest to know that he also taught me in Dallas, Dallas County, Texas during my ninth grade in 1954, at Alex W. Spence Junior High School, about 35 years later! There is also a Miss Bess Wood of Lufkin who taught at that same Dallas school at the time I was there, and who remembers my being there. She is Lillian's Aunt, Tempy Wood Abney's sister. Bess was born March 17,1897. In 1987, Bess resided at the Angelina Nursing Home, where Suzanne and I visited her once.

Martha attended the University of Texas at Austin, graduating in June of 1925. On the certified copy I have of the information she completed with her application to college, on the blank requesting her home address, said *No Street Address*. When you live on the street bearing your family name (Abney) and you are the only "mansion" on it, there is no need for an address number back then. You could just address a letter to them in Lufkin! Such were the days!

She was elected a member of the honor society, *Phi Beta Kappa*, according to the certified college transcript copy, the first scholastic fraternity in America. Phi Beta Kappa was organized at the College of William and Mary in Williamsburg, Virginia on December 5,1776. She had a double major in Latin and Greek. She was then engaged for marriage to fellow University of Texas student and Austin Theological Presbyterian Seminary student, Dwight Alfred Sharpe. She taught in the Lufkin Public Schools the ensuing year after here graduation.

Martha's education was in the classics, which was the usual major for the very few women of that day who were privileged to attend college. Martha and her husband-to-be would be the first generation of our family to graduate from the University of Texas. Now, three generations have graduated from there and a fourth maybe is on his way!

Growing out of that refined education was her skill in writing. I cherish the one "love letter" that came into my possession only in recent years that my Mother sent to my Father during the year that she taught school in Lufkin and he completed his Seminary studies in Austin before they married. Here is how the letter of October 20,1925 went:

"Dearest Sweetheart

"Please forgive me for writing on this paper. I'm in a powerful big hurry and can't hunt for any more. Last night I had so many papers to grade that I got sleepy and went to bed without ever writing to the sweetest person on earth. I thought about you, dearest, between papers and the last thing before I went to sleep, and the first thing this morning. Honey, you're in my heart all the time. I'm going to scribble this off just so it can be mailed this morning, and it won't be late. Tell me if you get it tomorrow morning.

"I'm the happiest thing, because I had a sweet letter waiting for me from your mother yesterday when I came in from school. Dwight, already I just love her to death. Don't tell your father, but she said when he read my first letter, he said "Well, I'm kinda left out on this deal." She said he was a little jealous, but said she was to send his love anyway. Now I just believe I will write him a little note or letter all to himself. I may enclose it with your next letter and you can give it to him when you pass through Georgetown Saturday. Is that all right? You know how easy it is for women to talk to each other, but because I'd never met him, I just felt a timidity in writing.

"The funny thing about it is that I was writing to your mother the same time she was writing to me. Guess she received mine yesterday too.

"Sweetheart, love me lots and don't blame me for writing like this. I just had so much work. I'll promise never to let it happen again. I'll write again tomorrow night.

"Must hurry up and eat breakfast now. Want to eat with me? I built the fire this morning.

Lovingly, Your own Martha"

Well, how's that for good romantic narrative?! Wonderful!

Martha graduated in 1925 and taught in the Lufkin Public Schools the following year, while my father completed his final year at Austin Presbyterian Theological Seminary in May of 1926.

Serving as wife of the Pastor suited Martha well. She loved living the role and the people loved her doing it. After marriage, her only gainful employment was as a teacher in the Houston Public Schools, Harris County, Texas during the 1940's World War II years when there were such shortages of people to teach.



During her daughters' high school years, she served as adult sponsor for the High School Youth Fellowship at the Central Park Presbyterian Church, located at 6914 Sherman Street, a couple of blocks east of 75th Street, near Wayside Boulevard. Fondly remembered by me are the summer trips on the weekends when the whole Sharpe family and the Youth Fellowship spent all day Saturdays at Stuart's Beach in Galveston on the Gulf of Mexico. One of my favorite memories were the many times when we went riding on the old-fashioned wooden roller coaster near the beach!



Reading was also an avocation for Martha. She "screened" much material for Dwight, marking articles and books she though it would be good for him to read. She truly was a helpmate for her husband in all the best senses of that concept. She was a lady of the

South in all its good senses of culture and heritage. And she was a wonderful mother to me, always holding up the bar for me to climb higher for better things, and to know God and our role with Him.

Martha was such a lady of positive influence on me. She was a woman of learning and culture, and instilled a respect and interest in those things in me. Though there were occasions for her to correct or discipline me for my actions, there never was a moment when I thought she did not love me with the upmost of motherly love. Though my father was the Pastor and spiritual head of the family, it was my mother who instructed me from the very beginning of receiving income (a weekly allowance at first) to set aside 10% of it for the offering at church that Sunday. I didn't understand why, but the practice of tithing instilled in me a pattern that has endured all of my life. The only change in it is that my giving, and that of me and my wife, has only increased in % to where we now give around 20% or more. We have since developed in the spiritual understandings about how and why that is the proper and prosperous thing to follow. Our blessings have been abundant!

Martha's remains left behind when she graduated to heaven are deposited in the grave site adjacent to her husband



in the Georgetown Cemetery, near Southwestern University, Georgetown, Williamson County, Texas.

Chapter 60 My Mother-in-Law, Alice Loraine McElroy

Alice Loraine McElroy was born January 4, 1914 in <u>Ottumwa, Wapello</u> <u>County, Iowa</u>, a city that hovered around a population of +- 20,000 over the years. It was a town whose beginning was in the mid 1800s, and the coal mining industry was of significant influence for many of those years. That date of January 4, 1914, was the very same day as was Jane Wyman, famous movie star and first wife of Ronald Reagan, the man who



was later to serve two terms as President of the United States.

Source: http://www.imdb.com/name/nm0943837/

1914 was the year that Edgar Rice Burroughs published his classic book, "Tarzan of the Apes." The Panama Canal opened on August 15. About a quarter billion tons of earth were moved to create it for \$366,650,000. On June 28, the event that was to precipitate World War I, the assassination of Archduke Francis Ferdinand of Austria, occurred at Sarajevo, Serbia. A resolution was passed by Congress on May 7 to establish Mother's Day to be celebrated on the second Sunday in May annually.

Source: Gorton Carruth, "Encyclopedia of American Facts & Dates, "Harper & Row, Publishers, New York, first edition 1817, eighth edition1987, pages 428-432.

Alice was a talented and beautiful young lady. Her artistic capabilities followed her throughout most of her life. She painted

many, many pieces in various media, and taught children the skills of art. Even today, our Sharpe home is blessed with numerous Alice McElroy Boggess paintings hanging on our walls.



Her college education freshman year was at Stephens College in Columbia, Missouri. The next year she traveled the country, mainly sightseeing in the western half. The following year, she enrolled as an art major at Louisiana State University in Baton Rouge. This was the time in her life when she met that dashingly handsome young man from Macon, Mississippi, Thomas Shelton (T. S.) Boggess, Jr., who was a graduate student at Louisiana State University Medical School in New Orleans. The following year, they married, despite the nation being in the depths of economic

recession. Their marriage ceremony was conducted September 4, 1935, at her family's home church, <u>the First Presbyterian Church,</u> <u>Ottumwa, Iowa.</u>

The wonderment and passion of their love enabled them to overcome those economic era obstacles, and they resided several years in New Orleans as T. S. achieved his master's degree and almost completed his doctrinal studies.

They moved to Griffin, Georgia before T. S. completed his PhD degree, as the economy pressed the need to take a job, which turned out to be at the <u>Georgia Experiment Station</u>, a research arm

of the <u>University of Georgia</u>. They lived there and later in Tifton, where their two children respectively were born. While still young children, the family returned to Griffin.



In 1947, at the beckoning of T.S.'s father, the family moved to the Boggess family farm in <u>Noxubee County, Mississippi</u>, and took up agricultural pursuits. This included dairy farming and the raising of chickens.

Operating a farm was not the vision T. S. had for his profession. Later, a feed store business was operated by the family before T. S. took to the road as a sales representative for clay pipe across the

South. They had sold their part of the farm and moved into Macon (Noxubee County) for "city" living. Macon has been pretty level in population over the years at about 2,000. In 2014, its population was about 2,700. Alice was responsible for the children and family home for weeks at a time, which was a challenge to which she rose and accomplished with style and success. The family were active in the First Baptist Church of Macon.

Alice, overcame the stigma in that Southern town of her originating life as a Yankee! Her winsome charm and gracious manner of living and relating to people won acceptance into the hearts of many in their community. She raised her daughter and son, who became well known among the people. Mostly, that was good. She traced her ancestry to an American Revolutionary soldier, Amos Heald, to qualify for the Daughters of the American Revolution, Dancing Rabbit Chapter of Noxubee County. Her daughter, Suzanne subsequently qualified through Amos Heald for her DAR membership as well! Suzanne's membership was in Dallas, TX in April 1988. The Boggess family returned to Georgia in 1958, where T. S. resumed work at the Georgia Experiment Station. Suzanne had gone to college at <u>Mississippi Southern University</u>, but it was Tommy's senior year in high school. It was a difficult time for him, as he was a star football player at Macon. He made the transition and played instead for the high school in Griffin, showing enough attractiveness to meet the young lady whom later he married, Lindley Jones Cheatham. Alice took up the position of Director of the Kindergarten School of the First Baptist Church. Alice served the school from 1959 to 1969. She nurtured her family by being a leader again in the Griffin community. She labored by the side of her husband to support him in his pursuits, both professionally and in community service.

They returned to the family farm in Noxubee County, Mississippi in 1974. They had inherited it from T. S.'s father, who died in1964. Again, she immersed herself into the society of Macon. They were members of the First Baptist Church, except for a brief couple of years at the <u>First Presbyterian Church</u>. Her artistic green thumb enhanced the beauty of their yard at home, both in Noxubee County and in Georgia. She always made a home of beauty, laden with antiques and representations of her artwork.

Here is one of pen & ink drawings from Grand Isle, Louisiana, one of the Gulf of Mexico coastal island, done back in the 1930's when they lived in New Orleans.



<u>There is posted on my Facebook Album</u> is a collection of the 10 paintings of Alice's that were passed on to Suzanne. Click on the link to enjoy them.

Her concluding days occurred when she was taken to Birmingham, Alabama for heart surgery. The surgery was successful in what it attempted to do, but she died from infection complications. She died November 24, 1994 at age 80. She was interred among other Boggess family members in the <u>Odd Fellows</u> <u>Cemetery, Macon, Noxubee County, Mississippi.</u>

Chapter 61 The Chase National Bank in our Family

What we know as the <u>Chase National Bank</u> today has a long history here in America. In 2017, it became the bank where we opened a personal checking account, after feeling our former bank was insufficient in its appreciation of our business. However, until 2017, I had not been aware of the Chase Bank's deep roots in American history and in principals who are relatives in our family.

On September 1, 1799, <u>The Manhattan Company</u> was founded September 1, 1799 by <u>Aaron Burr, Jr</u>. the 3rd Vice President of the United States. Besides his acumen as a banker, he served his nation as the 3rd Attorney General of the State of New York (1789 -1791), as a United States Senator (1791 – 1797). He served as Vice President of the United States (1801-1805), serving with <u>President Thomas Jefferson</u>, my 28th cousin, five times removed. Burr's life ended tragically as he involved himself in a pistol duel with <u>Alexander Hamilton</u>, who proved to be more of a big shot than Burr!

The Chase National Bank of New York was established in 1877. It, along with a few other banks, merged into what today is the Chase National Bank. By 1930, it was considered the largest bank in the world, in terms of financial assets. The namesake for this bank is <u>Salmon Portland Chase</u>, a national political leader in the mid 1800s, he was nominated and confirmed to serve for U. S. President Abraham Lincoln as his Cabinet Secretary of the Treasury. Subsequently Lincoln nominated him, and he was confirmed, to serve as Chief Justice of the U.S. Supreme Court.

Chase is the <u>6th cousin, once removed to Thomas Lincoln</u>, who is the husband of Nancy Hanks, the 8th cousin, 5 times removed to Edward Carleton, the husband of Ellen Newton, the stepdaughter of Danette Abney, my 6th great grand uncle. Furthering the Theory of Relativity, <u>Chase and Lincoln were 7th cousins</u> to each other.

Chapter 27 earlier in this autobiography covers our relationships with this icon Rockefeller family. Over the course of history, <u>John D. Rockefeller, Jr</u>. and the Rockefeller family were the largest shareholders of Chase National Bank. In 1921, John D. Rockefeller, Jr. received from his father enough JP Morgan Chase Bank stock to become its largest shareholder.

The JP Morgan Bank merged with the Chase Bank, creating ever greater banking assets. You can read about <u>J. P. Morgan</u> here. Also, you can read of J. P. Morgan in Chapter 58 of this autobiography.

The Chase bank had as Chairman of the Chase Bank Board a <u>Mr.</u> <u>Winthrop Williams Aldrich</u>. His service at Chases was 1930 – 1953.

Winthrop W. Aldrich is the brother-in-law of 3rd cousin, four times removed of Johann Philip Rockefeller, the husband of 3rd great grand aunt, <u>Catherina Sharp</u>. Aldrich was born in <u>Rhode Island</u> in 1885, the son of United States Senator <u>Nelson W. Aldrich</u>. He attended <u>Harvard University</u>, receiving a <u>bachelor's degree</u> in 1907 and a <u>J.D.</u> degree in 1910. You might recall that Harvard's first Treasurer was <u>Herbert Pelham</u>, my 25th cousin, eight times removed.

David Rockefeller became President of the Chase Bank in 1969, thus continuing the long tenure of Rockefeller family presence in that banking system.

The Chase Bank that houses our personal checking account is located at Roanoke, Texas at the intersection of Texas Highway 114 and U.S. Hwy 377. We commend it to you! The other branch from which we receive service is at 5220 W. Lovers Lane in Dallas, at the intersection of Inwood Boulevard. Our banker there is Mr. Michael Ference.

The 2018 name of the bank is JPMorgan Chase & Company, based in New York. It is the largest bank (in terms of assets and deposits) in the United States and the <u>sixth largest bank in the world</u>. The bank's first quarter net income in 2018 was \$8,700,000,000, up 35% from the previous year, making the most income of any bank in the United States. (Wall Street Journal, April 14, 2018, page 1). The five largest banks in the world all are Asian banks, the largest one, the Industrial & Commercial Bank of China, being 140% the size of the JPMorgan Chase Bank.

It is of good personal interest to have our family's contemporary banking needs met by the most significant bank in the United States, whose founding beginnings came from our family ancestry!

Chapter 62 Alfred The Great in our Family

Alfred the Great has no direct relationship to my immediate family. However, Alfred is the 37th great grandfather to my son-in-law, Steven O. Westmoreland. Various descendants of Alfred's were related to my ancestors. For example, King Edward the Confessor, the third great grandson of Alfred's was a first cousin, once removed to King William the Conqueror, my seventh cousin, 26 times removed.

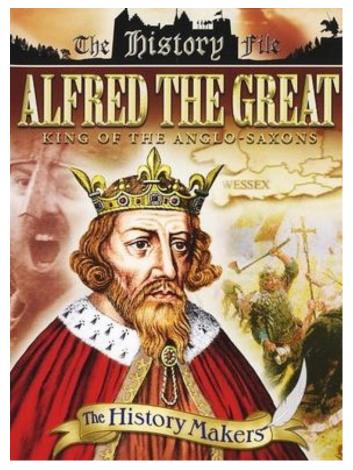


In relationship to me, it can be said that Alfred the Great was the 7th great grandfather of the 14th great uncle of Englishman Sir. Edward Southworth, the first wife of Alice Carpenter, my 7th great grandmother. My direct descending from Alice is through her second husband, Plymouth Colony Governor William Bradford.

Alfred was one of the greatest men in history. He founded the British Navy, organized the militia, compiled a code of laws, built schools and monasteries, and invited scholars to live at his court. He was a good scholar and translated many books himself. Alfred is the 24th great grandfather of Edward Southworth, the first husband of Alice Carpenter, my seventh great grandmother by her second husband, Plymouth Colony Governor William Bradford. Southworth also is my 25th cousin, eight times removed. Alfred is the 38th great grandfather of our Westmoreland grandchildren, Katie, Jack, Lily, Sarah and Sam.

Alfred the Great was king of the West Saxons in southwestern England. He saved his kingdom, Wessex, from the Danish Vikings and laid the basis for the unification of England under the West Saxon monarchy. He also led a revival of learning and literature. He was such an outstanding leader in war and peace that he is the only English King known as "the Great."

Alfred was born in Wantage (now in Oxfordshire), England. He was the youngest son of King Ethelwulf of Wessex. According to the Welsh writer, Asser, who wrote a biography of Alfred shortly after his death, Alfred was always eager to learn. Asser says that Alfred's mother offered a book of Anglo-Saxon poems as a prize to the first of her sons who could read it. Alfred won. As a boy, Alfred twice went to Rome, where the pope acknowledged the status of the royal house of Wessex. The journeys also showed Alfred the contrast between England and the more advanced parts of Europe.



Alfred became king in 871 at the death of his brother Ethelred. The West Saxons had been at war with the Danes for many years. After several losing battles, Alfred made peace with the invaders. But the Danes renewed their attacks and defeated Alfred at the Battle of Chippenham in 877. Alfred then defeated the Danes at the Battle of Edington in 878. The Danish leader, Guthrum, agreed to be baptized a Christian. He also agreed to stay north and east of the River Thames, in an area called the Danelaw. However, the Danes broke the peace, and Alfred renewed the war. He won London in 886. All the English

people not subject to the Danes recognized Alfred as their ruler and paid him homage. The old, independent Anglo-Saxon kingdoms began to merge under the rule of Wessex. Alfred built forts and boroughs (fortified towns) at strategic points. He stationed his fleet along the coast as protection against further invasions. He also issued a code of laws to restore peaceful government.

Before Alfred, education had declined in England, because the Danes had looted monasteries and churches, the centers of learning. Alfred revived learning by bringing teachers and writers from Wales and continental Europe. He encouraged the translation of famous Christian books from Latin into Old English. Under his influence, the Anglo-Saxon Chronicle began to be compiled. It is now the main source for Anglo-Saxon history up to 1154.

Contributor: Joel T. Rosenthal, Ph.D., Professor. of History, State University. of New York, Stony Brook, World Book Encyclopedia 1998

The reign of Alfred was known for more than military success. He was a codifier of law, a promoter of education and a supporter of the arts. He, himself, was a scholar and translated Latin books into the Anglo-Saxon tongue. The definitive contemporary work on Alfred's life is an unfinished account in Latin by Bishop Asser, a Welshman, bishop of Sherbourne and Alfred's counsellor. After his death, he was buried in his capital city of Winchester."

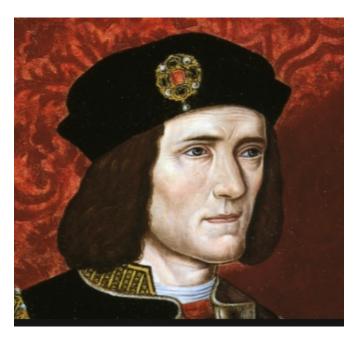
Source: http://www.britannia.com/history/monarchs/mon6.html

Although, it was similar to the Anglo-Saxon Chronicle in its analytic approach, Bishop Asser personalized his "Life of King Alfred" so that the man, and not just the Christian king who vanquished the pianistic heathen, was presented. Asser's "Life" differs also in its use of Latin, not the vernacular in which most sources from Alfred's reign are written.

Source: http://www.britannia.com/history/docs/asser.html

Here is a link to a more thorough report on the lineage of <u>Alfred the Great</u>. It covers 40 generations down to our contemporary family, and is spread over 320 pages.

Chapter 63 William the Conqueror in our Family



William the Conqueror, born 1027, died September 9, 1087, is my seventh cousin, 26 times removed. The ancestor in common with William and me is the ninth century Norwegian Viking, Eystein Glumra Ivarsson. Glumra Ivarsson is William's sixth great grandfather and Glumra Ivarsson is my 32nd great

grandfather on my Mother's Abney side of the family. William is the 17th great grandfather of affluent Englishman Edward Southworth, first husband of Alice Carpenter, on my Father's side of the family. Alice, through her second marriage, is my seventh great grandmother. William is the 31st great grandfather to my Westmoreland grandchildren: Katie, Jack, Lily, Sarah and Sam. William is the paternal grandfather of 14th great grand uncle of Edward Southworth, the first husband of my 7th great grandmother Alice Southworth Bradley.

William's lineage may be seen in <u>this relationship chart</u> to me.

Early in his adult life, he was known as William II, Duke of Normandy. It was later that he became better known as

William I, or William the Conqueror, King of England. He subdued rebellious vassals, defeated King Henry I of France at Val des Dunes (Henry is William's first cousin, twice removed). William defeated Harold, Saxon King of England at the Battle of Hastings in 1066. He was crowned King of England on December 22, 1066, according to some reports. Others place the coronation on Christmas day. The coronation was in Westminster Abbey. So, it can be said that this part of our family did not immigrate to England. They conquered it!

"William I, a Frenchman, was the first of many, many English Kings to be crowned in Westminster Abbey. Westminster Abbey marked the scene of many great events in English history. All the English rulers from the time of William the Conqueror, except Edward V and Edward VIII, were crowned there. Technically, William was not the actual first coronation in Westminster. Harold, the counselor to King Edward the Confessor, sought to usurp the crown upon Edward's death, despite William's coming to claim it. Harold had a rush job done to crown himself in Westminster Abbey. However, Harold's coronation, in a sense, does not count, as he was not of Royal blood. William was of Royal blood. In fact, William was a first cousin, once removed to King Edward the Confessor.

"What was the background about why William got involved in England?

"King Edward the Confessor (1002-1066), an Anglo-Saxon King descended from Alfred the Great, was crowned in 1042. As king, Edward lacked influence among England's Anglo-Saxon nobles, because he had lived in the Normandy region of northwestern France before becoming king. Edward's Anglo-Saxon father-in-law, Godwin, Earl of Wessex, tried to dominate Edward's reign. Edward resisted Godwin's efforts by relying on Norman advisers and administrators. Godwin died in 1053.

"King Edward was a pious man. He founded Westminster Abbey in 1042, which was completed in 1065. In 1161, Pope Alexander III canonized Edward (declared him a saint) and gave him the title of Confessor.

"King Richard I is the ancestor common to William I and King Edward. Richard is the great grandfather of William, and the grandfather of Edward

"Edward was childless, and a dispute arose over who should succeed him. His first cousin, once removed, William, Duke of Normandy, claimed Edward had promised him the throne. But when Edward died in1066, the English nobles chose Harold, Godwin's son, as king. William then invaded England, defeated Harold, and was crowned king. So, William rallied the troops and stormed across the English Channel to make claim on Edward's alleged promise to him. "William invaded England on September 28, 1066 and prepared for victory.

"The Battle of Hastings Plans:

"Harold learned that William had landed at Pevensey in the south of England when he was in the north of the country recovering Stamford Bridge and York. He marched his troops south as fast as possible, stopping in London for reinforcements. He took up position at Caldbec Hill, along the Sentlache Ridge, a few miles north of Hastings. As the ridge had deep ravines, streams and marshy ground on either side, Harold blocked William's only road out of the Hastings peninsula so forcing him into a frontal attack. By positioning his army at the top of the hill, he had clear visibility all around him and forced William's army into continually running up the hill to attack. Harold built a shield wall that stretched in rows along the ridge and which was made up of his housecarls, thegns (nobles) and fyrdmen. Being skilled fighters, the housecarls and thegns were positioned in between the fyrdmen who were unskilled, poorly armed and inexperienced peasant soldiers. Harold expected the wall to hold firm against assault and for William's men to tire and weaken from having to attack uphill. This would eventually allow Harold's army to launch a counter-attack with relatively fresh troops strong enough to defeat the opponent.

"William was unprepared for Harold's speedy arrival at Caldbec Hill, but quickly gathered his troops and went to meet him at Senlache. His army was divided into three sections, each with a commander. The left section comprised mainly of Bretons, the central section were Norman under William's command, and the right section was made up of the French and Flemish. Each section was divided into three rows - the archers, the infantry and the cavalry. William's plan was to use the archers first to send their arrows into the English ranks, followed by the infantry in hand-to-hand combat and to finally advance with the cavalry who had the height and power of being on horseback. The effect would be a three-pronged attack and a gradual build up in power that would demoralize the English.

"THE BATTLE:

"The battle took all day beginning early in the morning of 14th October 1066 with William's archers firing the first arrows into English ranks. William followed up his plan with an attack by the infantry and then by the cavalry, but Harold's army was stronger than expected and William's army sustained many casualties. The Bretons on the left flank panicked due to their lack of experience, the unexpected strength of Harold's army and the noise and confusion. They failed to keep in line and got ahead of the other two sections on their right. In their panic they began to retreat. Harold's less experienced fighters broke rank when they saw the Bretons retreating, and William's army slaughtered them.

"William retreated and regrouped. The second and following assaults went according to William's plan and he supported his troops by joining in the charge on horseback. Both sides became more tired as the day wore on and suffered heavy casualties. As the supply of arrows was running low, William ordered the archers to fire them high into the air for the final assault so that they fell into the rear ranks of the English army. This caused high casualties and the collapse of the English shield wall. The Norman's penetrated the ranks and killed Harold. With the morale of the English troops shattered by the death of their leader, the battle ended in defeat for the English, although the housecarls (the Pingalio) and thegns continued to fight to their deaths. However, more recently, historian Nicholas Hooper criticized Larson and stated that "it is time to debunk the housecarl"; according to Hooper, housecarls were not in effect distinguishable from Saxon thegas, and were mainly retainers who received lands or pay (or both), but without being really a standing army. Hooper asserts that while the Housecarles might well have had superior esprit de corps and more uniform training and equipment than the average Thegn, they would not necessarily have been a clearly defined military elite. Over the following months, William captured Canterbury, Winchester and London. He was crowned king on Christmas Day 1066.

"WHY DID HAROLD LOSE?

"Harold was badly prepared to face William's troops. William had spent months preparing for invasion in a secure position and environment in Normandy. Harold's tenure as king was weak from the time of his accession and, although aware of the threat from Normandy, he was occupied by other events at home.

"William built up his army and support in feudal tradition promising lands in England to those who joined his army and eternal paradise to anyone who died during the battle. He'd also obtained the approval of the Pope in his plans so gaining greater support and turning the invasion into a crusade. The knights were recruited with their own horses, men and equipment. Over the months, William's army was rigorously disciplined and trained before being ready to sail for England, but they had to wait until September before having a favorable wind. William's plans



suffered a setback when the fleet got caught in a storm and he had to take refuge and regroup in the Somme estuary. However, as a result, the distance he had to cover in his crossing was considerably shorter and the next opportunity he had to sail was at the time when Harold was in the north of England. "William's decision to land at Pevensey was important. Pevensey was on a lagoon to the west of Hastings and was a scarcely populated area. The lagoon was a shelter from the weather as the ships could be beached high up on the land at high tide. The Hastings peninsula was bordered by Pevensey Lagoon to the west and the River Brede to the east so providing it with natural protection from attack and only one way in and out of the peninsula to the main land in the north.

"William quickly established his presence on the peninsula including building up the Roman Fort at Pevensey and taking Hastings.

"Harold was not so lucky in his plans. Some weeks before the invasion, he had mobilized troops along the coast and sent his navy to the Isle of Wight to intercept William's fleet, but he was unable to keep them there, as they became demoralized waiting for William's army to set sail and concerned about gathering in the harvest in their home towns. Harold disbanded them at the beginning of September and lost many of his ships in the same storm from which William had been forced to take refuge. When he received news that William had landed at Pevensey, Harold was fighting the invasion of Harald Hardrada of Norway in the north.

"Despite his battle plan and his choice of a strategic location, Harold's army was exhausted from having to travel north and fight at Stamford Bridge, and then hastily return south without time to rest. Harold's support from the north was limited, and, although the Earls of Mercia and Northumberland had begun riding south, they turned back when they heard of Harold's death. Except for the housecarls and thegns, Harold's men were not trained and did not have the distant attack advantage of the archers or the power of the cavalry. In accordance with English tradition, those of Harold's army who were on horseback rode to the battle location and then fought on foot while William's cavalry walked to the location and then mounted for battle.

"THE RESULTS

"William was crowned king of England on Christmas Day 1066 (some say December 22 instead). There followed 88 years of Norman rule. The French and English cultures merged and the feudal system was introduced. This led to a tough discipline and training and it took away much of the Anglo-Saxon's freedom and rights. England's strength grew and she became a powerful force in European politics because of her tie with Normandy. Her army and navy were built up as well.

In 1085 William ordered a survey of English assets and this became known as the "Doomsday Book." William's reign was not easy, and there were rebellions which were quickly suppressed, but the Norman Conquest changed the face of England forever."

Source: World Book Encyclopedia, CD version, 1998

AND HERE ARE THE LATEST WORDS!

There is another claim of world significance made for King William I, as learned from the lectures of University of North Carolina English literature professor, Dr. Elliott Engel. Dr. Engel highlighted the historical fact that conquerors of the world traditionally required the conquered peoples to use for language in commerce and in government the language of the conqueror. William the Conqueror chose not to do that. He allowed the conquered English people to continue their language in commerce and in government transactions, while the French of the conquerors became commingled, often using French and English words in the same sentences so that people from both backgrounds would understand the meanings. These French words, in reality, became embedded into the English language, thus being a major reason that English has evolved into being the language of the world having the largest number of words.

So, it can be said that William the Conqueror is responsible to a large degree for the English language having the largest vocabulary in the world. In Dr. Elliott's 1994 lecture at the Richardson, Texas Civic Center, he said that the Oxford Dictionary then contained about 450,000 words. He said that a complete French dictionary would have about 150,000 words and that a complete Russian dictionary would have about 130,000 words.

"The history of Windsor Castle begins in the year 1070, when William the Conqueror built the original wooden structure located in what is now the inner most point of the castle. William chose the site for its superior military advantages; namely, that attackers would have to battle uphill in order to reach and overtake the castle. Although none of original wooden structure built by William remains in the Windsor Castle of today, the modern Windsor Castle still occupies the same ground. Henry II was the first monarch to transform the wooden fortress to a stronghold of stone, adding a stonewall which stood tall around Windsor Castle England. Parts of this wall can still be seen today."

Source:<u>http://www.destination360.com/europe/uk/windsor-</u> castle.php

William died September 9, 1087 from wounds received in a battle at Mantes, England. After being wounded he died at Rouen, England.

The New Law of the Land as set down by William the Conqueror and his advisors:

"First that above all things he wishes one God to be revered throughout his whole realm, one faith in Christ to be kept ever inviolate, and peace and security to be preserved between English and Normans.

"We decree also that every freeman shall affirm by oath and compact that he will be loyal to king William both within and without England, that he will preserve with him his lands and honor with all fidelity and defend him against his enemies.

"I will, moreover, that all the men I have brought with me, or who have come after me, shall be protected by my peace and shall dwell in quiet. And if any one of them shall be slain, let the lord of his murderer seize him within five days, if he can; but if he cannot, let him pay me 46 marks of silver so long as his substance avails. And when his substance is exhausted, let the whole hundred in which the murder took place pay what remains in common.

"And let every Frenchman who, in the time of king Edward, my kinsman, was a sharer in the customs of the English, pay what they call "Scotland lot." This was done according to the England. This decree was ordained in the city of Gloucester. "We forbid also that any live cattle shall be bought or sold for money except within cities, and this shall be done before three faithful witnesses; nor even anything old without surety and warrant. But if anyone shall do otherwise, let him pay once, and afterwards a second time for a fine.

"It was decreed there that if a Frenchman shall charge an Englishman with perjury or murder or theft or homicide or "ran," as the English call open rapine, which cannot be denied, the Englishman may defend himself, as he shall prefer, either by the ordeal of hot iron or by wager of battle. But if the Englishman be infirm, let him find another who will take his place. If one of them shall be vanquished, he shall pay a fine of 40 shillings to the king. If an Englishman shall charge a Frenchman and be unwilling to prove his accusation, either by ordeal or by wager of battle, I will, nevertheless, that the Frenchman shall acquit himself by a valid oath.

"This also I command and will, that all shall have and hold the law of the king Edward in respect of their lands and all their possessions, with the addition of those decrees I have ordained for the welfare of the English people.

"Every man who wishes to be considered a freeman shall be in pledge so that his surety shall hold him and hand him over to justice, if he shall offend in any way. And if any such shall escape, let his sureties see to it that they pay forthwith what is charge against him, and let them clear themselves of any complicity in his escape. Let recourse be had to the hundred and shire courts as our predecessors decreed. And those who ought of right to come and are unwilling to appear, shall be summoned once; and, if for the second time they refuse to come, one ox shall be taken from them, and they shall be summoned a third time. And if they do not come the third time, a second ox shall be taken from them. But if they do not come the fourth summons, the man who is unwilling to come shall forfeit from his goods the amount of the charge against him, "ceapgeld" as it is called, and in addition to this a fine to the king.

"I prohibit the sale of any man by another outside the country on pain of a fine to be paid in full to me.

"I also forbid that anyone shall be slain or hanged for any fault, but let his eyes be put out and let him be castrated. And this command shall not be violated under pain of a fine in full to me."

Source: <u>http://www.britannia.com/history/monarchs/laws.</u> <u>html</u>

In 1066, Halley's Comet was seen in England May 16 and thought to be a bad omen. Later that year Harold II of England died at the Battle of Hastings on October 14. Illustration of Halley's Comet is shown on the Bayeux Tapestry, and the accounts which have been preserved represent it as having then appeared to be four times the size of Venus, and to have shone with a light equal to a quarter of that of the Moon.

Source:<u>http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Comet_Halley</u>

It is a positive note for me to discover that the number one priority in William's list of law principles cited above centers upon the worship of God through Christ. The fierceness of William's conquering activities had led me to believe he was pagan, which was the Norman's Norwegians' roots. However, the Roman Catholic Church, the main Church of Europe in those years, apparently had its influence on William in his French Norman rearing.

"Windsor Castle was originally built by William the Conqueror, who reigned from 1066 until his death in 1087. His original wooden castle stood on the site of the present Round Tower ("A"). The castle formed part of his defensive ring of castles surrounding London, the site chosen in part because of its easily defendable position.

"Early in William's reign he had taken possession of a manor in what today is Old Windsor, probably a Saxon royal residence. A short time later between 1070 and 1086, he leased the site of the present castle from the Manor of Clewer and built the first motte-and-bailey castle. The motte is 50-feet high and consists of chalk excavated from a surrounding ditch, which then became a moat.

"Now the castle was defended by a wooden palisade rather than the thick stone walls seen today. The original plan of William the Conqueror's castle is unknown, but it was purely a military base and nothing structural survives from this early period. From that time, onwards the castle has remained in continuous use and has undergone numerous additions and improvements. His successor William II is thought to have improved and enlarged the structure, but the Conqueror's youngest son King Henry I was the first sovereign to live within the castle.

"Windsor Castle ($51 \approx 29'02$?N, $0 \approx 36'16$?W) is the largest inhabited castle in the world and the oldest in continuous occupation. Together with Buckingham Palace in London and Holyrood Palace in Edinburgh it is one of the principal official residences of the British monarch. The castle is located in the Berkshire town of Windsor, in the Thames Valley to the west of London.

Source: http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Windsor_Castle

Yet, both in Normandy and in England, William was faithful to tradition, and in England, especially, it became a cardinal feature of his administration to respect, and to utilize, the customs of the kingdom he had conquered. This is especially documented in David C. Douglas's book, "William the Conqueror," Chapter 12 (pp. 289-316).

Source: David C. Douglas, "William the Conqueror," University of California Press, C 1964 ISBM 0-520-00350-0 (this book is in my personal library)

Another famous landmark of London, nestled on the River Thames, is the Tower of London.

"According to Shakespeare, in his play Richard III, the Tower of London was first built by Julius Caesar. This supposed Roman origin is, however, just a myth. Its true foundation was in 1078 when William the Conqueror ordered the White Tower to be built. This was as much to protect the Normans from the people of the City of London as to protect London from outside invaders. William ordered the Tower to be built of stone which he had specially imported from France. He chose this location because he considered it to be a strategic point being opposite the site where Earl Godwin had landed in Southwark in 1051 during his Saxon rebellion against the Norman influence of Edward the Confessor. It was King Richard the Lion Heart who had the moat dug around the surrounding wall and filled with water from the Thames. The moat was not very successful until Henry III employed a Dutch moat building technique. The moat was drained in 1830, and human bones were in the refuse found at its bottom."

Source:<u>http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Tower_of_London</u>

Chapter 64 Earliest Known Christian in our Family – King Ceawlin

The passion for history in pursuing my ancestry includes a focus in learning the documentation and the extent of Christian experience that was present in my family lines. This report covers the person whom I believe was the very first Christian convert out of my originally pagan ancestry.

In 591, <u>Scottish King Ceawlin</u> received Christian Baptism. He is the earliest member of this ancestry which claimed Christianity, over 1,400 years ago. Pope Gregory had sent a missionary circa 590, named Father Columba. <u>King Ceawlin is</u> <u>the 18th great grandfather</u> of the 14th great grand uncle of the Edward Southworth, the first husband of my 7th great grandmother, <u>Alice Carpenter</u>. My descending from Alice was through her second husband, <u>Plymouth Colony Government</u> <u>William Bradford</u>.

Not only was my 7th great grandfather William Bradford a leader of the early Pilgrims to the New World in 1620, but he was the principal composer of the Mayflower Compact, that revolutionary document of self-governance agreed upon by the 102 passengers on the Mayflower prior to their stepping onto their new land. His Christian leadership of the Pilgrims became legendary and was truly a Christian witness

Caledonia (pronounced kal ih DOH nee uh) is the ancient Roman name for northern Scotland. It later became a poetic name for all Scotland. The Roman general Agricola invaded Caledonia in A.D. 83. The first Caledonians were the Picts. But the Caledonians of early English history were Picts and Scots. Their raids forced the Britons to seek the help of the Angles and the Saxons. Father Columba's ministry was to the Picts (pronounced pihkts) were an ancient people of northern Scotland. The Picts were given this name by the Romans, because they painted or tattooed their skin. The Latin word for painter is pictor. The first historical reference to the Picts occurs in a speech made by a Roman orator in A.D. 297. The Pictish tribes fought the Romans for many years. The Romans built two long walls to keep the Picts out of the province of Britain. Later, the Picts fought the Teutonic conquerors of Britain, the Angles and Saxons. They disappeared as a people about A.D. 900.

In 593, there was a great slaughter of Britons at Wanborough. King Ceawlin was driven from his Kingdom. This was the year he died, at the young age of 46.

However, King Ceawlin is revered in our minds as a fellow Christian in our family lines. Praise be to God!

Chapter 65 King James of the Bible

<u>King James I</u>, (June 19, 1566 – March 27, 1625) is <u>my 22nd cousin</u>, <u>11 times removed</u>. Our ancestors in common are Eystein Glumra Ivarsson and Aseda Rognvaldsdatter. They are <u>James' 21st</u> great grandparents and my <u>32nd great grandparents</u>. Eystein Glumra Ivarsson and Aseda Rognvaldsdatter are ninth century Vikings from Norway.



James I was born in 1566 to <u>Mary Queen of Scots</u> and her second husband, Henry Stewart, Lord Darnley. James descended from the Tudors through Margaret, daughter of Henry VII: both Mary Queen of Scots and Henry Stewart were grandchildren of Margaret Tudor. James ascended the Scottish throne upon the abdication of his

mother in 1567, but Scotland was ruled by regent until James reached his majority. He married Anne of Denmark in 1589, who bore him three sons and four daughters: Henry, Elizabeth, Margaret, Charles, Robert, Mary and Sophia. He was named successor to the English throne by his cousin, Elizabeth I and ascended that throne in 1603. James died of a stroke in 1625 after ruling Scotland for 58 years and England for 22 years.

Religious dissension was the basis of an event that confirmed and fueled James' paranoia: the <u>Gunpowder Plot of November 5</u>, <u>1605</u>. <u>Guy Fawkes</u> and four other Catholic dissenters were caught

attempting to blow up the House of Lords on a day in which the King was to open the session. The conspirators were executed, but a fresh wave of anti-Catholic sentiments washed across England.

James also disliked the Puritans who became excessive in their demands on the King, resulting in the first wave of English immigrants to North America. The ship Mayflower in 1620 was the first to complete the Atlantic crossing of these Pilgrims. Its 102 passengers included <u>William</u> <u>Bradford, my seventh great</u> <u>grandfather, who became Governor</u> of Plymouth Colony for several dozen years in the1600's.



After the Gunpowder Plot, James

sanctioned harsh measures to control non-conforming English Catholics. In May 1606, Parliament passed the Popish Recusants Act, which could require any citizen to take an Oath of Allegiance denying the Pope's authority over the king, James was conciliatory towards Catholics who took the Oath of Allegiance, and tolerated crypto-Catholicism even at court. Henry Howard, for example, was a crypto-Catholic, received back into the Catholic Church in his final months. On ascending the English throne, James suspected that he might need the support of Catholics in England, so he assured the Earl of Northumberland, a prominent sympathizer of the old religion, that he would not persecute "any that will be quiet and give but an outward obedience to the law".

In the Millenary Petition of 1603, the Puritan clergy demanded the abolition of confirmation, wedding rings, and the term "priest", among other things, and that the wearing of cap and surplice become optional. James was strict

in enforcing conformity at first, inducing a sense of persecution amongst many Puritans; but ejections and suspensions from livings became rarer as the reign continued. As a result of the Hampton Court Conference of 1604, a new translation and compilation of approved books of the Bible was commissioned to resolve discrepancies among different translations then being used. The Authorized King James Version, as it came to be known, was completed in 1611 and is considered a masterpiece of Jacobean prose. It is still in widespread use.

In Scotland, James attempted to bring the Scottish kirk "so neir as can be" to the English church and to reestablish episcopacy, a policy that met with strong opposition from Presbyterians. James returned to Scotland in 1617 for the only time after his accession in England, in the hope of implementing Anglican ritual. James's bishops forced his <u>Five Articles of</u> <u>Perth thr</u>ough a General Assembly the following year, but the rulings were widely resisted. James left the church in Scotland divided at his death, a source of future problems for his son.

James, however, did manage to commission an <u>Authorized Version</u> <u>of the Bible</u>, printed in English in 1611. It is what commonly is known as the King James version of the Bible.

The relationship between King and Parliament steadily eroded. Extravagant spending (particularly on James' favorites), inflation and bungled foreign policies discredited James in the eyes of Parliament. Parliament flatly refused to disburse funds to a king who ignored their concerns and were annoyed by rewards lavished on favorites and great amounts spent on decoration. James awarded over 200 peerages (landed titles) as, essentially, bribes designed to win loyalty, the most controversial of which was his creation of George Villiers (his closest advisor and companion) as <u>Duke of Buckingham</u>. Buckingham was highly influential in foreign policy, which failed miserably. James tried to kindle Spanish relations by seeking a marriage between his son Charles and the Spanish Infanta (who was less than receptive to the clumsy overtures of Charles and Buckingham), and by executing Sir Walter Raleigh at the behest of Spain.

Source: http://www.britannia.com/history/monarchs/mon46.html

King James' critiques cite as a defect in his character his public friendship with George Villiers, the Duke of Buckingham, who was considered an active homosexual, even though he married and gave issue to children. The King's reliance upon Villiers' influence in the matters of court was just too chummy for some people. Villiers continued to be a public distraction in the subsequent administration of King Charles I.

On January 31, 1606, Guy Fawkes, convicted for his part in the Gunpowder Plot against the English Parliament and King James I, was executed.

After about the age of fifty, James suffered increasingly from arthritis, gout and kidney stones. He also lost his teeth and drank heavily. The King was often seriously ill during the last year of his life, leaving him an increasingly peripheral figure, rarely able to visit London, while Buckingham consolidated his control of Charles to ensure his own future. One theory is that James may have suffered from porphyria, a disease of which his descendant George III of the United Kingdom exhibited some symptoms. James described his urine to physician Théodore de Mayerne as being the "dark red colour of Alicante wine. "The theory is dismissed by some experts, particularly in James's case, because he had kidney stones which can lead to blood in the urine, colouring it red. In early 1625, James was plagued by severe attacks of arthritis, gout, and fainting fits, and fell seriously ill in March with tertian ague and then suffered a stroke. He died at Theobalds House on 27 March during a violent attack of dysentery, with Buckingham at his bedside. James's funeral on 7 May was a magnificent but disorderly affair. Bishop John Williams of Lincoln preached the sermon, observing, "King Solomon died in Peace, when he had lived about sixty years ... and so you know did King James." The sermon was later printed as Great Britain's Salomon.

James was buried in Westminster Abbey. The position of the tomb was lost for many years until his lead coffin was found in the Henry VII vault in the 19th century, during an excavation. Ddddddd

Chapter 67 Movie Personality Clint Eastwood

Clinton Eastwood is my seventh cousin, three times removed. This is a connection down through the Kellogg, Steele and Bradford family lines on my father's side of the family. Clinton is the 9th great grandson of Plymouth Colony Governor William Bradford. I am Bradford's seventh great grandson. He is a ninth cousin to movie actor Christopher Reeve (Superman).

Clint was born the same year the same year as when William Howard Taft, the 27th president and a former chief justice of the United States, died in Washington, D.C., at age 72 on March 8, 1930. Taft was the father-in-law of Eleanor Kellogg Chase Taft, my sixth cousin, once removed. Clint is the seventh cousin, twice removed to Eleanor.

Source:http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/William_Howard_Taft

Clint was born the same month that Ellen Church, the first airline stewardess, went on duty aboard a United Airlines flight between San Francisco and Cheyenne, Wyoming.

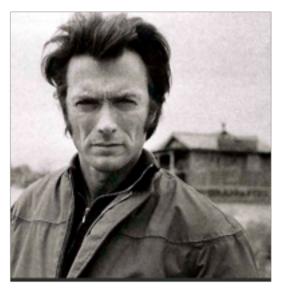
Source:http://www.pbs.org/kcet/chasingthesun/innovators/echurc h.html

Clint was a motion picture producer, director and actor (including Dirty Harry 1977), and recipient of numerous motion picture industry awards.

Source:http://kinnexions.com/kinnexions/cousinsd.htm#CEastwoo d

Perhaps the icon of macho movie stars, and a living legend, Clint

Eastwood has become a standard in international cinema. Born in 1930 in San Francisco, the son of a steel worker, Eastwood



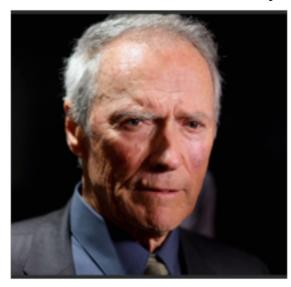
was a college dropout from Los Angeles College, attempting a business related degree. He found work in such B-films as "Tarantula" (1955), and "Francis in the Navy" (1955), until he got his first breakthrough with the long-running TV series "Rawhide" (1959). As Rowdy Yates, he made the show his own and became a household name around the country.

But Eastwood found even bigger and better things with "Per un pugno didollari" (1964) ("A Fistful of Dollars"), and "Per qualche dollaro inpi" (1965) ("For a Few Dollars More"). But it was the third sequel to "A Fistful of Dollars" where he found one of his trademark roles: "Buono, il brutto, il cattivo, II" (1966) ("The Good, The Bad and The Ugly"). The movie was a big hit, and he became an instant international star. Eastwood got some excellent roles thereafter: "Where Eagles Dare" (1968) found him second fiddle to Richard Burton, but to the tune of \$800,000 in this classic World War II movie. He also starred in "Coogan's Bluff" (1968), (the loose inspiration to the TV series "McCloud" (1970)) and the unusual, but successful "Paint Your Wagon" (1969). In 1970 Eastwood went in an experimental direction again with the offbeat "Kelly's Heroes" (1970), which was yet again a success.

His best year in films, or at least one of his best, proved to be 1971. He starred in the thriller "Play Misty for Me" (1971) and "The Beguiled" (1971). But it was his role as the hard edge police inspector in Dirty Harry (1971) that gave Eastwood one of his

signature roles and invented the loose-cannon cop genre that has been imitated even to this day. Eastwood still found work in Spaghetti westerns like "High Plains Drifter" (1973), "Joe Kidd" (1972) and "Hang 'Em High" (1968). Eastwood had constant quality films with "Thunderbolt and Lightfoot" (1974) and "Magnum Force" (1973), a sequel to "Dirty Harry" (1971), but 1976 found Eastwood with even more legendary films. The first was "The Enforcer" (1976), often considered to be the best "Dirty Harry" sequel, and "The Outlaw Josey Wales" (1976), considered to perhaps be one of the quintessential westerns.

As the late seventies approached, Eastwood found more solid work in comedies like "Every Which Way But Loose" (1978) and



in thrillers like "Escape from Alcatraz" (1979), but he seemed to have lost his edge in making great films. In the early eighties, Eastwood made credible movies with "Honkytonk Man" (1982) and "Firefox" (1982), but it was the fourth sequel to "Dirty Harry", "Sudden Impact" (1983), that made him a viable star for the eighties. At this time, Eastwood

seemed to be competing with Burt Reynolds as America's top movie star. In the mid-eighties Clint made some solid movies, but nothing really stuck out. "Tightrope" (1984), "City Heat" (1984) (with Reynolds), and others were solid, but not classic films. In 1988, Eastwood did his fifth and, up to this point, final "Dirty Harry" movie, "The Dead Pool" (1988). Although it was a success, overall it did not have the box office punch his previous films had. About this time, with outright bombs like "The Rookie" (1990) and "Pink Cadillac" (1989), it was fairly obvious Eastwood's star was declining as it never had before. He then started taking on more personal projects such as directing "Bird" (1988), a biopic of Charlie 'Bird' Parker, and starring in and directing "White Hunter, Black Heart" (1990), an uneven, loose biography of John Huston.

But Eastwood surprised yet again. First with his western, "Unforgiven" (1992), which garnered him an Oscar for director, and nomination for best actor. Then he took on the secret service in In the "Line of Fire" (1993), which was a big hit, followed by the interesting but, poorly received drama, "A Perfect World" (1993), with Kevin Costner. Next up was a love story, "The Bridges of Madison County" (1995), but it soon became apparent he was going backwards after his brief revival. Since "The Bridges of Madison County," his films have been good, but not always successful at the Box Office. Among them were the badly received "True Crime" (1999) and "Blood Work" (2002), and the well-received "Space Cowboys" (2000). But he did have a big success directing "Midnight in the Garden of Good and Evil" (1997).

Eastwood has seven children, has been married twice, and had a longtime relationship with frequent co-star Sondra Locke. Although he is aging now, Clint Eastwood has surprised before, and who knows, he may surprise again.

IMDb mini-biography by Scott- msa0510@mail.ecu.edu

Source: http://www.imdb.com/name/nm0000142/bio

The family name of Eastwood may come from immigrants who used that name as the place from which they came in England. That is not certain, but here is some information about that town:



"Eastwood is a town four miles west of South end on Sea in Essex, England. It is a suburb of Southend and part of the Southend-on-Sea unitary district. Eastwood is sometimes called Eastwood Park, such as for local elections.

"Eastwood is bordered by Rayleigh to the west, Rochford to the north-east, and Belfairs to the south. To the north lies Edwards Hall Park, a large area of open countryside, part of which is farmland. This green space extends all the way to Hockley Woods, and Hockley. There are also several swing parks throughout Eastwood.



"Leigh-on-Sea is to the south, and the centre of Southend is to the South-East."

Source:<u>http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Ea</u> stwood, Essex

<u>Here is a relationship chart</u> connecting Clint Eastwood and myself.

Chapter 68 Legendary Teddy Roosevelt, Soldier, President & Hunter

President Theodore Roosevelt (Teddy), the 26th President of the United States, was born the same year that George Goethals was born (6/29/1858 - 1/21/1928), who is the American army engineer that directed construction of the Panama Canal.

Source:http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/George_Washington_Goethals



Published family biographical sketches of the Roosevelt family indicate President Theodore Roosevelt was born with that name, but his father was recorded as Theodore Roosevelt, Sr. I've not noticed the President Roosevelt being expresses with a "Jr." suffix.

President Theodore Roosevelt is a fifth cousin to the 32nd President Franklin Delano Roosevelt, who is my half eighth cousin. So, Teddy is a cousin to a cousin. Teddy's other relation to us is through his niece, Eleanor Roosevelt, who married Franklin

Del

ano Roosevelt. Another way to describe Teddy's relationship is that he is the brother of the father-in-law of the seventh great grandson of my seventh fifth great grandmother, Alice Carpenter. Another way of describing his relationship to us is the he is the brother of <u>father-in-law of the 7th great</u> <u>grandson of my 7th great grandmother.</u>

Though President Theodore Roosevelt is not directly related to our first President, General George Washington, Theodore's relative, Franklin, is related to General Washington as a 13th cousin, eight times removed.



On July 1, 1898, Theodore Roosevelt and his <u>"Rough Ride</u>rs" waged a victorious assault on San Juan Hill in Cuba during the Spanish American War. He was one of the most conspicuous heroes of the war

Harry Seth Sharpe, my grandfather, was a Private in Company L of the Texas Infantry in the <u>Spanish American War</u>. He drew a pension as of November 21, 1927, Certificate #A-8-6-28, Company L, Texas Infantry. In historic narratives about the Spanish American War, it is noted that the then Col. Theodore Roosevelt, the future President of the United States, had a recruiting effort in San Antonio to garner soldiers for the war effort. Roosevelt's recruiting was at the Menger Hotel, that gracious old place of hospitality across the street from the famed Alamo. The recruiting story is available at the hotel today, where we have visited several times. When my parents lived in San Antonio in their senior years, the restaurant in the <u>Menger Hotel</u> was the favorite place of luxury where my mother loved to dine for special occasions. Though we do not have information about Harry's recruitment, we believe it most likely took place at this San Antonio event, as it is reasonably close to Georgetown (about 100 miles) where Harry lived.

After completing his military work in Cuba, he campaigned for the Office of Governor of New York, which he won in 1898 by a mere 1% margin. Due to the death of U.S. Vice President Garret Hobart, Teddy was recruited to assume the Vice Presidency early in 1900. As Vice President, he ascended to assume the Presidency when President William McKinley was assassinated.

The <u>first public Presidential Car Ride</u> was taken by President Theodore Roosevelt on August 22, 1906. This was a tour in areas of New England.

President Theodore Roosevelt first used the term <u>"muck-rake"</u> as he criticized what he saw as the excesses of investigative journalism in a speech to the Gridiron Club in Washington on March 17, 1906.

On the issue of immigration, President Roosevelt had a definite opinion. This is quoted from a 1907 speech: "In the first place, we should insist that if the immigrant who comes here in good faith becomes an American and



assimilates himself to us, he shall be treated on an exact equality with everyone else, for it is an outrage to discriminate against any such man because of creed, or birthplace, or origin. But this is predicated upon the person's becoming in every facet an American, and nothing but an American ... There can be no divided allegiance here. Any man who says he is an American, but something else also, isn't an American at all. We have room for but one flag, the American flag ... We have room for but one language here, and that is the English language ... and we have room for but one sole loyalty and that is a loyalty to the American people."

"With the <u>assassination of President McKinley</u>, Theodore Roosevelt, not quite age 43, became the youngest President in the Nation's history in September 1901. He was elected in 1904. He served till his term ended January 20, 1909. He brought new excitement and power to the Presidency, as he vigorously led Congress and the American public toward progressive reforms and a strong foreign policy.

"He took the view that the President, as a steward of the people, 'should take whatever action necessary for the public good, unless expressly forbidden by law or the Constitution.' I did not usurp power," he wrote, "but I did greatly broaden the use of executive power."

"Roosevelt's youth differed sharply from that of the log cabin Presidents. He was born in New York City in 1858 into a wealthy family, but he, too, struggled --- against ill health --- and, in his triumph, became an advocate of the strenuous life.



"In 1884 his first wife, <u>Alice Lee</u> <u>Roosevelt</u>, and his mother died on the same day. Roosevelt spent much of the next two years on <u>his ranch in the</u> <u>Badlands of Dakota Territory</u>. There he mastered his sorrow as he lived in the saddle, driving cattle, hunting big game --- he even captured an outlaw. On a visit to London, he married <u>Edith Carow</u> in December 1886.

"Boss Tom Platt, needing a hero to draw attention away from scandals in New York State, accepted Roosevelt as the Republican candidate for Governor in 1898. Roosevelt won and served with distinction.

"As President, Roosevelt held the ideal that the Government should be the great arbiter of the conflicting economic forces in the Nation, especially between capital and labor, guaranteeing justice to each and dispensing favors to none.

"Roosevelt emerged spectacularly as a "trust buster" by forcing the dissolution of a great railroad combination in the Northwest. Other antitrust suits under the Sherman Act followed.

"Roosevelt steered the United States more actively into world politics. He liked to quote a favorite proverb, <u>'Speak softly and carry a big stick....</u>'

"Aware of the strategic need for a shortcut between the Atlantic and Pacific Oceans, Roosevelt ensured the construction of the Panama Canal. His corollary to the Monroe Doctrine prevented the establishment of foreign bases in the Caribbean and arrogated the sole right of intervention in Latin America to the United States.

"He won the <u>Nobel Peace Prize on December 10, 1906</u> for mediating the Russo-Japanese War, reached a Gentleman's Agreement on immigration with Japan, and sent the Great White Fleet on a goodwill tour of the world."

Source:http://www.whitehouse.gov/history/presidents/tr26.html

He was the first American to win the Nobel Peace Prize. It was a prize that began world-wide awards in 1901. The other of our family members to win a Nobel Peace Prize was the sixth American to win it. It was the former Senator from Minnesota and who was the United States Secretary of State, <u>Frank Billings Kellogg</u>. Frank is my half sixth cousin, twice removed to me. I must admit that some of the more contemporary winners of the Nobel



Peace Prize have made me wonder whether the value of that prize has not depreciated in its meaning.

"Some of Theodore Roosevelt's most effective achievements were in conservation. He added enormously to the national forests in the West, reserved lands for public use, and fostered great irrigation projects.

"He crusaded endlessly on matters big and small, exciting audiences with his high-pitched voice, jutting jaw, and pounding fist. 'The life of strenuous endeavor' was a must for those around him, as he romped with his five younger children and led ambassadors on hikes through <u>Rock Creek Park in Washington, D.C.</u>

"Leaving the Presidency in 1909, Roosevelt went on an African safari, then jumped back into politics. In 1912, he ran for President on a Progressive ticket. To reporters, he once remarked that he felt as fit as a bull moose, the name of his new party."

Source:http://www.whitehouse.gov/history/presidents/tr26.html

Theodore Roosevelt also a lifelong friend to the Jewish people. After the Spanish-American War, Theodore became New York City Police Commissioner. During this time, an infamous anti-Semite was scheduled to deliver a high-profile public address. Theodore's commitment to free speech prevented him from cancelling the appearance, so instead he assigned the man a security detail of Jewish police officers.

In 1901, President William McKinley ran for re-election, with Theodore on the ticket as his VP (McKinley's previous VP died of heart failure). McKinley won in a landslide, but less than a year later he was felled by an assassin's bullet and Theodore Roosevelt became President of the United States.

As President, Theodore Roosevelt, known as TR, was beloved by many American Jews for his outspoken defense of the persecuted Jews of Russia. In 1903, the brutal Kishniev pogrom led the Jewish community to rally in support of their endangered brethren. They successfully lobbied the President to send a letter of protest to the Czar of Russia. The arrogant Czar refused to even accept TR's letter, which said in part, "I need not dwell upon a fact so patent as the widespread indignation with which the Americans heard of the dreadful outrages upon the Jews in Kishniev."

Theodore Roosevelt made history by being the first president to appoint a Jew to a Cabinet position. Oscar Straus was a well-respected U.S. Ambassador to Ottoman Turkey during the 1880's and 90's. In 1906, TR reached out to Straus, saying, "I don't know whether you know it or not, but I want you to become a member of my Cabinet. I have a very high estimate of your character, your judgment and your ability, and I want you for personal reasons. There is still a further reason: I want to show Russia and some other countries what we think of Jews in this country."

Oscar Straus served as United States Secretary of Commerce and Labor for the rest of TR's term, which ended in 1909. TR received a Nobel Peace Prize for his valiant efforts to settle the Russo-Japanese War. He donated a large portion of his proceeds to the National Jewish Welfare Board.

A passionate Zionist, TR believed in the Jewish people's right to a nation state in their ancient homeland, at that time occupied by Ottoman colonizers. After World War I he said that "peace could only be real when the Armenians and the Arabs were given their independence, and the Jews given control of Palestine."

The text **in red** is attributed from the Facebook Page posting 2016-11-16 by the Accidental Talmudist organization, a non-profit organization in Los Angeles, California

"Despite his contention that he was 'as fit as a bull moose,' the Republican Party denied Theodore Roosevelt its nomination for President and, instead, backed incumbent William Taft. Four years earlier, Taft was Roosevelt's handpicked successor for the presidency, but the two had a falling out. Taft called TR a 'dangerous egotist' and a 'demagogue.' Roosevelt countered by referring to Taft as a 'fathead' and a 'puzzlewit.' William Howard Taft is the first cousin of the husband of my seventh cousin, once removed, Eleanor Kellogg Chase.

"With his defeat, Roosevelt bolted the Republican Party to run under the banner of the Progressive Party - renamed the Bull Moose Party in his honor. Feeling the pressure, Taft broke with precedent and became the first President to campaign actively on his own behalf while in office. The election turned into a two-way race between Roosevelt and Woodrow Wilson, with Taft running a distant third. Roosevelt called for a 'Square Deal' and would control monopoly by regulating it. Wilson spoke of the 'New Freedom' and called for the breakup of big business as a means of restoring economic competition.

"In the end, Republicans split their vote between Roosevelt and Taft, allowing Wilson to gain the presidency with a 42% plurality. Wilson's victory made him only the second Democrat to win the presidency, since the Civil War. Taft was humiliated, gaining only 8 electoral votes to Roosevelt's 88."

Source:http://www.eyewitnesstohistory.com/votr.htm

Roosevelt was "Shot in the chest while entering an automobile outside the <u>Hotel</u> <u>Gilpatrick in Milwaukee, Wisconsin</u> by would-be assassin John Nepomuk Schrank at about 8:00p.m. Campaigning on the 'Bull Moose' ticket, Roosevelt delivered a 90-minute speech at the Auditorium in Milwaukee before seeking medical attention. The bullet would never be removed."

Source:http://www.opm.gov/about_opm/tr/phototimeline.asp



President Roosevelt was a strong outdoors man and hunter. In an account about the Winchester rifle history, it was reported that "President Teddy Roosevelt was also a Winchester devotee, using the1895 model on his famous <u>1909 African safari</u>, which historians credited with boosting the sale of Winchester sporting rifles."

Source: "Great Days Outdoors Magazine," March 2006, published monthly by Alan White, Stapleton, Alabama (www.gdomag.com), page 9

Teddy Roosevelt's tenure as President ultimately was honored with the naming of a room after him in the White House. Here's the story:

"The windowless Roosevelt Room occupies the original site of the president's office when the West Wing was built in 1902. Seven years later, the room became a part of two waiting rooms when the West Wing was expanded and the Oval Office was built. When Franklin Roosevelt relocated the Oval Office from the center of the building to the southeast corner in 1934, this room received a skylight."

On the night of January 5, 1919, Roosevelt suffered breathing problems. After receiving treatment from his physician, Dr. George W. Faller, he felt better and went to bed. Roosevelt's last words were "Please put out that light, James" to his family servant James Amos. Between 4:00 and 4:15 the next morning, Roosevelt died in his sleep at Sagamore Hill after a blood clot had detached from a vein and traveled to his lungs. He was sixty years old. Upon receiving word of his death, his son Archibald telegraphed his siblings: "The old lion is dead." Woodrow Wilson's vice president, Thomas R. Marshall, said that "Death had to take Roosevelt sleeping, for if he had been awake, there would have been a fight." Following a private farewell service in the North Room at Sagamore Hill, a simple

funeral was held at Christ Episcopal Church in Oyster Bay. Vice President Thomas R. Marshall, Charles Evans Hughes, Warren Harding, Henry Cabot Lodge, and William Howard Taft were among the mourners. The snowcovered procession route to Young's Memorial Cemetery was lined with spectators and a squad of mounted policemen who had ridden from New York City. Roosevelt was buried on a hillside overlooking Oyster Bay.



Chapter 69 Teaching Our Children How Our Nation is Governed

We who are worshippers of the God of the Bible rely upon various truths in which we put our confidences, spiritually. We look forward to the Biblicallypromised coming of the Messiah, Jesus Christ, Lord or all. We expect either to meet Him at that coming, or we expect to graduate though earthly death to be with Him in Heaven immediately upon that graduation.

Our human experiences thus far have been in the graduation mode of earthly death, and there are certain elements about that, which can be helpful to our families and friends whom we leave behind at such times.

Suzanne and I have done some planning along those lines, and have made those plans available for our family and friends to know. Here is a link where you can review those plans we have adopted:

http://www.dasharpe.com/Graduation/Graduation.html

We publicize these plans as an encouragement to all our friends to give thought about their plans and what should their family members know are your assumptions and desires. It is hoped that our plans can be a helpful set of steps for your thoughts and plans.

Chapter 70 – Frith Lake Social Club

One of the social pillars of Noxubee County and the City of Macon is the Frith Lake Club. It has a colorful and unique history of over seventy years, which this article is intended to explore. My interview in June of 2003 with my father-in-law, Thomas Shelton Boggess, Jr. (Mr. T. S.) is the source of most of this material. He has served as President of the club since 1975. He graduated to Heaven January 29, 2010.

There is uncertainty as to the origin of the name, Frith. There was a hotel



operating in Macon circa the turn of the century (that is 1900, not 2000). One of the privileges offered by the hotel was to take hotel guests on day trips down to this lake to fish. It apparently became known as Frith Lake, and some conjecture is that a Mr. Frith may have been the hotel owner or manager.

Frith Lake is located about five miles south of Macon on U.S. Hwy 45. An unmarked gravel road going east from the highway winds around for about three miles over to the Frith Lake grounds. Anyone not familiar with where Frith

Lake is would have difficulty finding the way without help. The lake is unusually deep, with some claiming it is formed over a large sink hole. One time in the 1990's the Forest Ranger had a captured alligator that Mr. Boggess gave permission locate into the lake. This helped reduce the somewhat bothersome snake population around the lake, but the alligator apparently took to the road

sometime later, and most probably headed for the Noxubee River, which is adjacent to the lake.

The social birth of Frith Lake began in 1920 when four Noxubee County gentlemen went together to purchase the land around the lake to create a social club. They were Mr. Thomas S. Boggess (Mr. Tom), Lloyd L. Shannon, Julian Eugene Boggess and an attorney, Mr. Len L. Martin. The two Boggess men were brothers, and Mr. Tom was the father of Mr. T. S.

A club was formed with an initial closed membership of 20 or 25 (memory eludes us). It was closed in the sense that a limit was set on the number of the members, and that any new members had to be voted upon by the membership for approval when member vacancies occurred or when, over the years, the membership limit was raised.

The initial fee for membership was fifty cents a month. The mantel piece of this endeavor was to be a dance club, a social phenomenon typical of those days in the



roaring 1920's. The initial unit of the club house was completed in October of 1923. It basically consisted of a housed dance floor room with peripheral screened in side rooms for food preparation and seating. It's the main entrance room today where the fireplace is located. Of course, more additions have been added over the years to reach its size of today. Some memories claim the beginning and ending of construction was 1923 – 1924. There is a stone under the club house in the middle with its date inscribed. It is not a very convenient location to view it!

The socialization began with summertime use as a camp and dance occasion. The weekends

were the height of the festivities. Usually a live orchestra was engaged to play. Often this was a local band. Early dances, before a club house was erected, took place on a leveled off area of ground with pine straw forming its base. In those days, the Noxubee River was good for swimming recreation, which many enjoyed.

The camp cook was a black man named Lidge (sp?) Williams. His name may have been a contraction from the Old Testament prophet's name, Elijah. He delighted the people with mighty good chow.

The families would come out to Frith Lake and pitch campsites to live a few weeks in the summer. The women and children lived in their tents and the men lived in their tents. These were somewhat large community type tents. There was a chow hall tent where they all gathered to dine. The women and children would stay during the weekdays while the men folk returned to work, returning in the evenings and on the weekends.



This pattern of activity continued through the 1920's, but the economic depression



of the nation in the 1930's reflected in a decline for this club. The financial capabilities of the club and the members drifted down so far that the property was auctioned off at the Noxubee County Courthouse for \$37 back taxes. One of the original four founders, Mr. Julian Eugene Boggess, stepped forward to purchase the property for the back taxes and donated it back to the club. So, he saved the day for the club at that point.

The camping seemed to discontinue in the early 1930's in favor of merely coming out to the club house for dance and other social occasions. About that time, it was started to be called Frith Lake Country Club. Edwin Mason Murphy, Jr. and James Horton gave leadership to the club in the 1930's and the 1940's. Part of this time was when Edwin was Mayor of Macon. About 1960, the Pine View Country Club, largely under the leadership of Dr. Morris, was formed, and that resulted in some drainage of members from the Frith Lake Country Club. Later the "Country" was dropped. Since then, it has been known as Frith Lake Club.

Mr. T. S. (Thomas Shelton Boggess, Jr.) retired from his work at the Food Science



Department of the University of Georgia and returned to the family farm on Magnolia Drive near Macon in 1973. It wasn't long before the Club invited him to rejoin. He was elected President in 1975 and has served the longest single tenure of leadership for the Frith Lake Club.

Mr. George Winter, a band leader from Alabama, has been a centerpiece of the Christmas holiday dances for each year since about 1976 (neither he nor we can remember for sure). This has kept alive the lively element of Frith

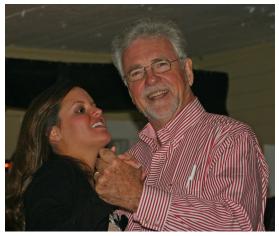
Lake Club being a dance club.

Today (circa 2006), the Club has a thriving membership of between 50 and 60. It meets together about eight months out of the year. Two major events are on their annual calendar. The Fourth of July bar-b-que picnic is one, and the annual Christmas season holiday dance on Friday or Saturday evening after Thanksgiving is the other. The shift to Saturday in recent years was to accommodate the deer hunters of the Club, who didn't want to come in from their camps on Friday evening when they could get one more day of hunting in by waiting till Saturday!

My family and I have attended this Christmas dance for most years since the late 1970's. We cannot remember that we missed any. Our three children were teenagers from that time on and more-or-less grew up going to this annual dance. Quite a tradition for our family, and we have loved doing it!

We have not attended since Christmas 2009. In 2017, I sent an inquiry to Mary Ann Gray back in Macon, as she and her husband, Marion had been so very active in the Frith Lake Club. Here is her report received 2017-09-09:

"We do still have Frith Lake; in fact, Marion and I were on the August committee. We now only have 29 members and widows number 11. This is, of course, many less as I remember having 60 some years ago. We attend when we can and still enjoy the July 4th barbecue though it is not always held on the 4th. We took our youngest daughter and her 3 young children this year and had a good time. We just do not have many young people



staying in Noxubee County and those who do are not "joiners." We no longer have the Christmas dance, but do have the monthly suppers. The club house has the monthly suppers. The club house is in pretty bad shape, since it is not used anymore. We basically only use the pavilion. Thank you for sharing the history that you have written; we always think of T. S. when we go out there and miss his being there. Everyone loved him very much, and he is mentioned at each meeting. He was a wonderful man and really kept Frith Lake going. The country club here closed around ten years ago; the building and grounds were sold to a black church. But I don't believe they use it for services, just other activities. The golf course is still here and is maintained by the city now. The old Chancellor Wholesale Grocery store on Jefferson Street is being torn down and the bricks are being sold. That is sad. Things are changing here.

"Let me know if you need any more information about Frith Lake. My parents enjoyed Frith Lake Club for many years, but my father died in 1994 and my mother in 2007. They were Wayne Anderson and Beth (Adams) Anderson. My father owned 1/2 of the Ford automobile dealership here for many years with Paul Daniel.

"Marion and I are both retired now. Marion retired from his dental practice in 2013, and I retired from Bank First in 2016 after 42 years, with most of my years there as EVP/CFO. I retired from the bank and the bank board the same year, 2016. Last year I taught one high school accounting class at Central Academy here from November until May 2017, and really enjoyed that. However, the school closed this year because of lack of students. I am enjoying retirement, but stay busy with my church, First United Methodist, the Rotary Club, Daughters of the

American Revolution, Woman's Study Club, treasurer Revolution, Woman's Study Club, treasurer for Harold Gibson Brown Memorial Library. It seems I am always working on some organization's books, but the pay is modest. I keep the church's books for free as well, as several other non-profit groups. I enjoy my grandchildren, who all live near Jackson, MS, cooking, reading, crocheting and traveling so I am NOT bored. I cannot understand these people who say they get bored when they retire."

We are grateful to you, Mary Gray, for this update on the Frith Lake Club's life. Thank you.

Chapter 71 – Preparing for Graduation to Heaven

The intention for this document is to serve as an advance guide to family members who survive me to be helped with information useful in the conclusion of my life.

A pleasingly full and blessed life has been the loving experience for Suzanne and me to share together in a most excellence venue for living life. We share with you the joy and blessing we feel for God's Providence in our lives and with the family members He has permitted us to have a part in shaping and enjoying.

With both of us cruising along in our upper 70s, age-wise, it has seemed appropriate to develop known plans for when each of us graduates to Heaven! In addition, a purpose of this document is to enable our family members or friends who want to know what these expectations are, and what each of you reading this might learn.

The north Texas DFW area has been the focus of our living and of our Christian experiences, continuously since 1982. For me, it included my high school years in the 1950s as well. Being a fifthgeneration Texan, my sense of well-being here is comforting and Suzanne, my Georgia-born, Mississippi-raised beautiful bride of my life has adapted very well as a fellow Texan! It is for these reasons that our graduation plans, to the extent such are feasible, are established here.

We expect to complete our earthly lives here while living on our 10 acres of homeland in Aurora, Wise County, Texas, a place called home since 1999! We expect our friends and loved ones to celebrate our home-goings at worship services at our home church, Eagle Mountain International Church, outside of Newark, Texas. Whoever in our family is making service arrangements needs to contact the pastoral staff at our church (817-252-2900) to see about what is available in the way of schedule, location on the campus, and pastoral availability to conduct the service.

Our son, Taylor (214-522-5525) will have access to my database to generate information about the graduation, the service, etc. Categories of relatives and friends on our personal databases are identified in advance to whom Taylor can communicate digitally. That will give options to make travel arrangements, if desired.

Our plan is to have cremated remains interred at the

<u>Greenwood Cemetery in Fort Worth</u>, Texas. It is on the 200 acres of the northwest quadrant of the intersection of University Boulevard and White Settlement Road. The address is 3100 White Settlement Road, Fort Worth, TX 76107. The office telephone: (817) 336-0584. Arrangements have been made and paid for those services. The cemetery space is #3 in the Benediction Lot #39.

The decision for this location was partly influenced by the fact that my great grandfather, James Alfred Simons, along with 11 other of his family members and relatives, resides in the Lot #39 as well, so it is with a sense of being with family that we like this selection.

For the benefit and information of our immediate family

members, this document includes photo images of each of these relatives' gravestones, along with a description of each of their relationship to me. As many of you know, my interests have included pursuing genealogical information about my ancestors, and doing much to tie together how our family has interfaced with and among people of historical, governmental and spiritual roles in the cultures of the world. In keeping with that interest, it is the plan to have my obituary in our local newspapers, *The Wise*

County Messenger, The Bridgeport Index, and *The Chico Texan* to include those parts of my historical experiences that may be helpful to some inquiring researchers, years after my living here among you. Prepayment has been made to allow about 25 columnar newspaper inches for this!

It also will include a URL citation of the Autobiography being created to display most of the family, historical and genealogical data that my research has gathered. It is free for the public to access.

http://www.dasharpe.com/Autobiography.html

A benefit of cremation for graduations is that one's memorial services at the church may be scheduled to be a time that is later than for a traditional burial, thus giving more friends and family the option of deciding to attend, if travel is an element. This is our way to encourage loved ones to gather, as it seems that weddings and funerals are frequent occasions that draw family together. After all, it's the last way to make an ash of one's self!

Another family connection exists in the area on Suzanne's side of the family. Her great grandfather, Dr. John Thomas Taylor, 1864 – 1935, was a dentist who practiced in a downtown Fort Worth office, and who resided immediately south of the Tarrant County Courthouse in the business district. He'd married Ida Capatola Hicks Taylor in 1886. Suzanne's great grandmother lived out her last years at her daughter's farm in Macon, Noxubee County, Mississippi, ending in 1970. She was Mary Taylor Boggess. Dr. Taylor is interred in the Mount Olivet Cemetery, a sister property owned by the Greenwood Cemetery organization. It is located just to the east of I-35W.

It is hoped that those interested in reading this document will feel informed about the graduation services all of us approach in life. Should you have any further questions or comments, please feel free to inquire of me. I will do my best to provide a reply.

Chapter 72 Publications & Magazines to Which I Subscribe

It can be interesting to notice what people read in the way of sources periodically provided in our society. Our subscription list generally reflects values or causes, which we support. However not all subscriptions mean support. Some of these are generic sources in which we just want to see what's going on. Some reflect causes we do not support, but subscribe so we can be aware of what "the opposition" says. Here's our list of 30 publications. It's a random list, its order not intending to signify anything. Generally, it's grouped by print newspapers, then by magazines.

The print media most faithfully read daily is the *Holy Bible*. Suzanne & I have followed daily reading schedules in it, covering the entire Bible every year since 1986! So, the year 2017 is our 32nd time to read through the Bible. We keep learning new things!

Wise County Messenger Bridgeport Index Fort Worth Star Telegram Wall Street Journal Reader's Digest* Forbes Magazine Imprimis Believer's Voice of Victory Texas Co-op Power Texas Co-op Power Texas Parks & Wildlife Southern Living Time Magazine Noxubee County (MS) Historical Society Quarterly "Bulletin" Wise County (TX) Historical Society Quarterly Newsletter (L) Sons of the American Revolution Monthly Magazine **CFA Quarterly Newsletter (Chapman Family Association) Dallas SAR Chapter Monthly Newsletter (Sons of American Revolution**) The Torch (Christians United for Israel) **Alcalde Magazine** (Ex Students Association University of Texas at Austin (L) **McCombs School of Business Magazine (University of Texas) Ozark Visitor** (College of the Ozarks) **English Speaking Union Monthly Newsletter** Miracle Living Today (CBN – 700 Club) **The Texian** (Sons of the Republic of Texas) **Billye Brim Ministries Rick Renner Ministries** Faith Exchange Fellowship (Dan Stratton) **Bill Winston Ministries** WallBuilders (David Barton) **Data Far North (Jewish wives)**

*Reader's Digest is a magazine always known to me, as my parents subscribed to it all my remembered life. After graduating from college in 1962, I entered by own subscription in 1964 and have been a continuous subscriber and faithful reader ever since then. It's my longest association with any kind of commercial periodical print media!

(L) Life Time Member

Chapter 73 - Directory of Relatives

The quest for my gathering information about our family and the ancestry for them began about 1978, about four decades ago.

Over that period, the accumulation of individuals currently totals 9,159 people, as of August 28, 2017! These are recorded in a genealogical database program. There is the access to creating an alphabetical list of these people for quick reference to see if a name in which you are interested is among them.

In some cases, there only is given name information and no surname. This often is with females who married, but whose maiden name was not found. Any records not having a born surname are simply listed alphabetically by the given name information recorded.

Their names are listed, followed by the dates of birth, marriage and death to the extent such data has been discovered. It produces a list that is 208 pages long.

Click Here for the List.

Chapter 74 – Conclusion

Compiling this historical and genealogical material has been an invigorating experience for me. Its primary purpose is to make available information for the use of our children, grandchildren and any other relatives having such an interest.

It has been my privilege to research enough records to see an amazing number of significant people who've crossed the paths of our family. Many people could identify such connections, I am confident, should their interest lead them to investigate. Our family, for the most part, has contained people who have nurtured a Christian faith and discipline. My attempts have been to include whatever information that could be found to tell you, the readers, about how Christian faith is such a significant element in our lives. I hope you will notice those occasions that are illustrated.

This material is not for sale. It is for sharing freely with you and others who want to get their arms around history and family. Please feel free to use the information to enhance whatever you may choose to write about your family. If you use significant portions from this work, I do not require your seeking my permission. It would be appreciated if you would attribute this work as a source when you do make such use.

Blessings upon you,

Dwight Albert (D. A.) Sharpe

Here I am outside one of our family's homes, known as <u>Mount Vernon</u>, George Washington's place.

